

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS.

Chap. *E468* Copyright No.

Shelf *K 35*

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.





T. S. Wagner, Lith, Philad^a

LIEUT GEN^L WINFIELD SCOTT.

*Engraved expressly for the History of the Civil War in the
United States.*

Kenon
Cal
Indian
New
Sands
Plattshur
on
Platte
Liber
endence
rrensbu
Grand R.
svales
Cra
Scott
Greenfi
ws
Sprin
thage
as
M. Ve
Hemph
an
Fajeta
F. Gilson
Van Buren
F. S.
Poteau
Poteau M.
Pacindij

Kenon
Cal
Indian
New
Sands
Plattshur
on
Platte
Liber
endence
rrensbu
Grand R.
svales
Cra
Scott
Greenfi
ws
Sprin
thage
as
M. Ve
Hemph
an
Fajeta
F. Gilson
Van Buren
F. S.
Poteau
Poteau M.
Pacindij



MAP OF THE
((SEAT OF WAR))

- EXPLANATION
- capitals of States and Territories
 - Principal cities and Towns
 - Railroads
 - the Proposed
 - Location of the
 - Battle Field
 - Figures attached to Mountains indicate their heights in feet.

A HISTORY
OF THE
CIVIL WAR
IN THE
UNITED STATES,

FROM ITS COMMENCEMENT IN 1861, TO JANUARY, 1862.

TO BE CONTINUED TO THE TERMINATION OF THE WAR.

✓
BY JOHN KENNEDY, Esq.
"

1872

4

PHILADELPHIA:
KENNEDY & COMPANY, PUBLISHERS.

S. E. CORNER OF FOURTH & WALNUT STREETS

L1861-3
S.13.70

E 468
K 35

Entered according to the Act of Congress, in the year 1861,

BY KENNEDY & GREELY,

the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States, in and for the
Eastern District of Pennsylvania

2 1 6 2

J. H. JONES & CO., PRINTERS,
234 Carter's Alley, Phila

TO THE HON. J. M. P.

At your earnest solicitation I undertake the task of compiling a "History of the Civil War in the United States." I deeply feel the responsibility that rests on me in this undertaking—of giving to the world a true and correct history of the great events which have, and may still transpire in our beloved country. In reviewing the disjointed incidents of the past, and chaining them together into a comprehensive history, I cannot but weep for the honored dead, while my heart swells with pride at the deeds of daring and valor performed by the noble spirits who still live, and who rushed to the rescue of their country. To the glorious dead it will be my lot to devote pages of the history as a just tribute to their memory; while their names and their deeds will live in the hearts of their grateful countrymen, as a monument of their patriotism and devotion to their country. To the living I will do ample justice, and mete out to the deserving all the honor and glory our limited space, as historian, will permit, feeling confident that a grateful people will bestow upon them such honor as brave men and true patriots deserve.

You will accept my humble acknowledgements for the interest you have manifested in the work, and rest assured I will ever remain your devoted friend.

JOHN KENNEDY.

Philadelphia, Nov., 1861.

PREFACE.

In preparing this work for the public, we have endeavored to procure the best and most reliable information possible to obtain. In many instances the accounts of battles are meagre and unsatisfactory, failing to give the name of the commanding officer, and the number of troops engaged. Of many of the small contests and skirmishes there are no official accounts, and no record of the events, except a telegraphic dispatch announcing that a skirmish had taken place. However, by constant search, and keeping in view the position and locality of divisions of the army, we have in most cases traced out the time and place of events, and endeavored to give a plain and comprehensive detail of them. The task has been more laborious from the fact that the army was not, until the close of the year, so divided as to place it in a condition to move on regular campaigns, and we were therefore compelled to follow the incidents by dates, moving from one locality to another, as the date demanded.

The accounts of battles and incidents published in the Southern States, have been so exaggerated and far from the true state of facts, that we have refrained from giving them. Recently a law was passed by the Confederate Congress, prohibiting the publication of news calculated to create a

panic, justly concluding they have trouble enough of their own. Every source of obtaining any correct information is obstructed, and when the accounts of battles are published in their papers, if it has been a defeat, they torture it into a victory. It was therefore impossible to place any reliance in their statements.

Our great object in preparing the work, was to lay before the public, in a concise and regular manner, the leading incidents of the war, that by perusing it could be seen that the success of the Federal arms had been much greater than at first thought might be imagined. The victories have been numerous, and in nearly all cases fought at great odds in favor of the enemy. Taking, then, a view of the war from the time of its absolute commencement, in April, wonders unparalleled have been accomplished. If we have added by this narrative our might to strengthen the cause of the Union, we feel doubly repaid for our labor, and dedicate our work to the UNION AND ITS DEFENDERS.

THE AUTHOR.

Philadelphia, January, 1862

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
INTRODUCTION, - - - - -	5
CHAPTER I.—The Political Campaign of 1860, - - -	15
CHAPTER II.—Secession of South Carolina, - - -	31
CHAPTER III.—The Committee of Thirty-three, - - -	42
CHAPTER IV.—President Buchanan's Position, - - -	56
CHAPTER V.—Major Anderson Evacuates Fort Moultrie, - -	66
CHAPTER VI.—Seizure of the Forts and Arsenal at Charleston, -	73
CHAPTER VII.—Seizure of the Forts in Georgia, - - -	77
CHAPTER VIII.—Reinforcements Sent to Fort Sumter, - - -	95
CHAPTER IX.—Seizure of the Forts in North Carolina, - -	100
CHAPTER X.—Secession of Georgia, Louisiana and Texas—Inau- gural Address of Jefferson Davis, - - - -	114
CHAPTER XI.—Parson Brownlow and George D. Prentice—The Inauguration of Mr. Lincoln, - - - -	120
CHAPTER XII.—President Lincoln's Inaugural Address—The Bombardment of Fort Sumter, - - - -	125
CHAPTER XIII.—Evacuation of Fort Sumter, - - - -	133
CHAPTER XIV.—Destruction of Norfolk Navy Yard and Harper's Ferry Armory, - - - -	143
CHAPTER XV.—Occupation of Virginia, and Death of Colonel Ellsworth, - - - -	153
CHAPTER XVI.—The Capture of Romney and Phillippi, in West- ern Virginia—Position of the Federal Army, - - -	162
CHAPTER XVII.—Battle at Great Bethel—Death of Lieutenant Grebbe—Evacuation of Harper's Ferry by the Confederate Troops, - - - -	168
CHAPTER XVIII.—Battle of Boonville—Death of Captain Ward— Battle of Falling Waters, - - - -	173
CHAPTER XIX.—Meeting of the Extra Session of Congress— Battle of Carthage—Battle of Rich Mountain—Battle of Cheat Mountain, and Death of General Garnet, - - -	180

	PAGE.
CHAPTER XX.—The Battle of Bull's Run, - - -	189
CHAPTER XXI.—The Battle of Wilson's Creek—Death of General Lyon, - - - - -	202
CHAPTER XXII.—General Fremont in Missouri—Expedition to Hatteras Inlet, - - - - -	212
CHAPTER XXIII.—Retreat of General Floyd—Capture of Lex- ington, Missouri, by the Confederate Army, - -	220
CHAPTER XXIV.—Attack on the Zouaves at Fort Pickens— Battle at Bolivar Heights, - - - - -	226
CHAPTER XXV.—Battle of Ball's Bluff, - - - - -	231
CHAPTER XXVI.—Battle at Fredericktown, Missouri—Charge of Zagoni's Cavalry—Capture of Romney, Virginia, -	236
CHAPTER XXVII.—Capture of Forts Walker and Beauregard at Port Royal, - - - - -	242
CHAPTER XXVIII.—Capture of Mason and Slidell—Shelling of the Confederate Troops on Santa Rosa Island, - -	248
CHAPTER XXIX.—Parson Brownlow in the Field—General Pope in Missouri, - - - - -	254
CHAPTER XXX.—Battle at Warrensburg, Missouri—Battle at Drainesville—Table Showing the Strength of the Army and Navy, - - - - -	259
CHAPTER XXXI.—Disbanding of Humphrey Marshall's Forces— Battle at Spring Mills, Kentucky, - - - - -	265
Chronological Table of Events, from December, 1860, to Janu- ary, 1862, - - - - -	278

INTRODUCTION.

It has been asserted that when a nation reaches a certain degree of power and opulence, it then has within itself the means of its own destruction. What that certain degree may be, has never been settled, nor do we now advance the theory for the purpose of argument. It is a fact beyond dispute, however, that when a people, by a long-continued peace, and seasons of unbounded prosperity, become so involved in the transactions of commerce, trade and traffic, that they almost forget they have a government, then they entrust its care to corrupt political administrators. Such is the history of every government conducted on a republican basis, and if not directly, has been indirectly the cause of the destruction of that form of government. This, to a certain extent, has been the misfortune of the people of the United States, and has almost swallowed by its dreadful results the Federal Government. It is, nevertheless, true, that the people engaged in politics, and exercised the elective franchise to its fullest extent; but they placed too much confidence in dishonest politicians, and too often drew party lines to the exclusion of honesty and integrity. Engaged in the various civil pursuits of life, the people little dreamed of the immense mine that disappointed politicians and their minions were laying at the very base of the Republic, almost powerful enough to utterly destroy it. When, however, the thunder burst upon them from Fort Sumter, and the peril became glaringly visible, they awakened to the danger, and were astounded at its immensity. Immediately political lines vanished, and the Northern States be-

came one great Union party. The Southern States were divided upon the question of Union and Secession, but the latter party, led by men of bad principles and dishonest at heart, became the strongest and most powerful, and by ostracism and acts of violence, overpowered and crushed the Union party. By falsehood and misrepresentation, they caused the honest people of the South to believe the political triumph of the Republican party, as it is called, was an aggressive movement—an invasion of their rights, and an attempt to interfere with and eventually destroy their local institutions. By this duplicity they involved the Southern States in a most formidable insurrection.

During the days of John C. Calhoun, South Carolina became dissatisfied, and insurrection began to raise its wicked head ; but, by the promptness and energy of Andrew Jackson, the President, it was smothered, only to be revived in 1861.

During the latter part of the year 1849, and the beginning of 1850, and previous to the passage of the famous compromise measures of Henry Clay, there were ominous threatenings of rebellion, and it was upon one or two occasions currently reported that the members of Congress from the South had deserted their places, and were about to return to their respective States. The difficulties at this time were caused by an angry discussion of the subject of slavery, that had for some years before and up to this period occupied the time and attention of members of Congress from the two extremes of the Union. But now it assumed a more formidable aspect, and for a time threatened the most disastrous results. The contest, however, was confined to the halls of Congress, where a war of sharp and bitter words was vigorously waged. It was afterwards remarked by a Senator who had coolly listened to the angry debate, that the people did not know how closely they had approached a dissolution of the Union.

The debate arose upon the construction of the Constitution involving the question whether Congress, under the Constitution, had the power of legislating slavery into, or excluding it from territories about to be organized. In January, 1850, Henry Clay, then Senator from the State of Kentucky, introduced his compromise bill, with a view of conclusively settling this agitating question. It was drawn with great skill and care, and was ably supported by him with all the power of his convincing arguments and persuasive eloquence. The bill contained, among others, the following important provisions: That it was improper for Congress to legislate upon the question of slavery in the territories acquired by the United States from Mexico, either for its introduction or exclusion; that territorial government should be established for the territory recently obtained; that slavery should not be abolished in the District of Columbia while it existed in Maryland, but the sale of slaves brought into it from other States, or their transportation through it to other markets should be prohibited. For some months the bill occupied the attention of Congress, and when the time for its passage arrived, the propositions of Mr. Clay were so altered, modified and amended that the original was almost invisible. At the same time the Fugitive Slave Law was passed, which gave to the Slave States the right, under certain legal restrictions, of recovering the slaves who had fled to the Free States. In some of the States the Fugitive Slave Law was obnoxious to the people, and the legislatures of such States declared it unconstitutional, and null and void, and exonerated the citizens from complying with its provisions. Residents in the Slave States, who had information that their slaves were in the Free States, armed with the legal documents under the law, resorted to those States to reclaim their property. The people, in many instances, refused to comply with their demands, which not unfrequently resulted

in fatal consequences to one or the other of the contending parties. The question was in this way brought directly from the halls of Congress to the people.

For about four years after the adoption of the compromise measures, the country was comparatively quiet, except an occasional conflict occurring upon an attempt to recover a fugitive slave. The people seemed to have almost forgotten the crisis through which they had passed, and the government being in a flourishing condition and judiciously administered, they paid but little attention to politics. In 1852 the two great national parties, embodied the propositions of the Compromise in their platforms, and with this as a part of their creed of faith, they put their candidates for the Presidency in the field. Lieutenant General Scott was the nominee of the Whig party, while Franklin Pierce, who had acquired some fame in the Mexican war, led the Democratic forces. The contest was not a very warm one, and did not partake of that interest it deserved. The result was the utter overthrow and defeat of the Whig party, from which it never recovered. It was now supposed that the slavery question was for ever settled, and the country had quieted down and appeared satisfied that a subject so perplexing and exciting was dismissed. In January, 1854, Stephen A. Douglas, Chairman of the Committee on Territories, a Senator from the State of Illinois, introduced a bill for the organization of the Territory of Nebraska. The bill contained a clause repealing the Compromise of 1850, and again opened to Congress the discussion of the slavery question. It provided that the people should be free to regulate their own domestic institutions, subject only to the Constitution of the United States.

About the same time the Territory of Kansas was organized, and in both instances the lawful citizens were left free to decide upon the question whether slavery should or should

not exist in the territories. Citizens who had emigrated to the territories from slave States claimed that under the territorial government they had a right to be protected in the occupation of their slave property. This was denied by the opponents of slavery, and acts of violence followed. Then arose a contention whether Kansas should be a free or a slave State. Preparations were made to adopt a Constitution, and after the preliminaries had been properly arranged the question in regard to slavery came directly before the people of the territory. Then followed infringements and outrages upon the legal rights of voters, each party desiring to overpower the other—one for the introduction of slavery and the other opposed to it. It became a matter of such serious importance, that the House of Representatives of Congress appointed a committee to investigate the matter. The committee after a labored term, returned to Washington, laid their report before the House, and it was ordered to be printed. From that report, which is a State paper, we make extracts to show to what extremes of hostility and individual cruelty and the subversion of law and justice this question of slavery has led :

“On the morning of election, the Judges appointed by the Governor appeared and opened the polls. Their names were Harrison Burson, Nathaniel Ramsay, and Mr. Ellison. The Missourians began to come in early in the morning, some 500 or 600 of them, in wagons and carriages, and on horseback, under the lead of Samuel J. Jones, then Postmaster of Westport, Missouri, Claiborne F. Jackson, and Mr. Steely, of Independence, Mo. They were armed with double-barreled guns, rifles, bowie-knives and pistols, and had flags hoisted. They held a sort of informal election, off at one side, at first for Governor of Kansas, and shortly afterwards announced Thomas Johnson, of Shawnee Missions, elected Governor.

“The polls had been opened but a short time, when Mr. Jones marched with the crowd up to the window, and demanded that they should be allowed to vote without swearing as to

their residence. After some noisy and threatening talk, Claiborne F. Jackson addressed the crowd, saying they had come there to vote, that they had a right to vote if they had been there but five minutes, and he was not willing to go home without voting, which was received with cheers. Jackson then called upon them to form into little bands of fifteen or twenty, which they did, and went to an ox-wagon filled with guns, which were distributed among them, and proceeded to load some of them on the ground. In pursuance of Jackson's request, they tied white tape or ribbons in their button-holes, so as to distinguish them from the 'Abolitionists.' They again demanded that the Judges should resign, and upon their refusing to do so, smashed in the window, sash and all, and presented their pistols and guns to them, threatening to shoot them. Some one on the outside cried out to them not to shoot, as there were Pro-Slavery men in the room with the Judges. They then put a pry under the corner of the house, which was a log house, and lifted it up a few inches and let it fall again, but desisted upon being told there were Pro-Slavery men in the house. During this time the crowd repeatedly demanded to be allowed to vote without being sworn, and Mr. Ellison, one of the Judges, expressed himself willing, but the other two Judges refused; thereupon a body of men, headed by 'Sheriff Jones,' rushed into the Judges' room with cocked pistols and drawn bowie-knives in their hands, and approached Burson and Ramsay. Jones pulled out his watch, and said he would give them five minutes to resign in, or die. When the five minutes had expired and the Judges *did not* resign, Jones said he would give them another minute, and no more. Ellison told his associates that if they did not resign, there would be one hundred shots fired into the room in less than fifteen minutes, and then, snatching up the ballot-box, ran out into the crowd, holding up the ballot-box and hurrahing for Missouri. About that time Burson and Ramsay were called out by their friends, and not suffered to return. When Mr. Burson went out, he put the ballot poll-books in his pocket, and took them with him; and, as he was going out, Jones snatched some papers away from him, and shortly afterward came out himself, holding them up, crying 'hurrah for Missouri.' After he discovered they were not the poll-books, he took a party of men with him and started off to take the poll-books from Burson. Mr. Burson saw them coming, and he gave the

books to Mr. Umberger, and told him to start off in another direction, so as to mislead Jones and his party. Jones and his party caught Mr. Umberger, took the poll-books away from him, and Jones took him up behind him on a horse, and carried him back a prisoner. After Jones and his party had taken Umberger back, they went to the house of Mr. Ramsay, and took Judge John A. Wakefield prisoner, and carried him to the place of election, and made him get up on a wagon and make them a speech; after which they put a white ribbon in his button-hole and let him go. They then chose two new Judges, and proceeded with the election.

“They also threatened to kill the Judges if they did not receive their votes without swearing them, or else resign. They said no man should vote who would submit to be sworn; that they would kill any one who would offer to do so. They said no man should vote this day unless he voted an open ticket, and was ‘all right on the goose,’ and that if they could not vote by fair means, they would by foul means. They said they had as much right to vote, if they had been in the Territory two minutes, as if they had been there for two years, and they would vote. Some of the citizens who were about the window, but had not voted when the crowd of Missourians marched up there, upon attempting to vote, were driven back by the mob, or driven off. One of them, Mr. J. M. Macey, was asked if he would take the oath, and upon his replying that he would if the Judges required it, he was dragged through the crowd away from the polls, amid cries of ‘Kill the d——d nigger thief!’ ‘Cut his throat!’ ‘Tear his heart out!’ After they got him to the outside of the crowd, they stood around him with cocked revolvers and drawn bowie-knives, one man putting a knife to his heart, so that it touched him, another holding a cocked pistol to his ear, while another struck at him with a club. The Missourians said they had a right to vote if they had been in the Territory but five minutes. Some said they had been hired to come there and vote, and got a dollar a day, and they would vote or die there. They said the 30th day of March was an important day, as Kansas would be made a Slave State on that day. They began to leave in the direction of Missouri in the afternoon, after they had voted, leaving some thirty or forty around the house where the election was held, to guard the polls until after the election was over.”

Notwithstanding these troubles a constitution was prepared by the people of Kansas, and forwarded to Congress by commissioners appointed for that purpose. It failed, however, to become a law, and Kansas remained a territory until the year 1860, when it was admitted into the Union as a free State.

After the overthrow of the Whig party, in 1852, it disappeared from the arena of politics as a national party, preserving its identity in a few localities. In its stead arose a party that for a short time threatened by its rapid growth to overwhelm the Democratic party and utterly destroy it. The Native American party had existed for many years, but had never reached formidable proportions. When the Whig party was left without leaders, and the results of 1852 disheartened its members, they sought refuge in the Native American party. Secret organizations were effected, men were initiated into its mysteries, and all the preliminary preparations for elections were carried on within doors. Men were nominated for office and elected, without even knowing that their names had been mentioned favorably in connection with the trust committed to them. They were astounded—astonished, and the thing seemed so novel that in a very few months it drew away great portions of the Democratic party. This new party received the euphonious name of KNOW NOTHING, supposed to have originated from the circumstance that when members were questioned in regard to the strangely political proceedings, they *knew nothing*. With this party, for a short time, the temperance cause was united, and the famous Maine Law was passed in almost every Northern State. In almost every local election the Democrats were defeated by immense majorities. This was a strange phenomena in politics, and the sudden revolution could scarcely be accounted for. The Democrats had achieved a great national victory a year or two before, which made this sudden change the more astounding.

About the year 1855, the Republican party made its appearance in the councils of the Native American party, and soon rose to a prominent and commanding position. It continued its connection with that party until the spring of 1856.

The time for an election of President of the United States was rapidly approaching, and the different parties commenced active preparations to place their candidates in the field. What remained of the Democratic party perfected its organization, and appointed its delegates to a National Convention, to meet in Cincinnati, Ohio. That convention assembled, and after the usual preliminary proceedings nominated James Buchanan, of Pennsylvania, as the candidate.

The Native American (or Know Nothing) and the Republican parties united, were the only formidable opponents to the Democrats. It was the desire of the leaders of the two former parties to unite their strength against the Democrats, and by concert of action ensure its defeat. Delegates were appointed to a national convention, to assemble in Philadelphia, in April, 1856, to nominate a candidate for the Presidency. That convention assembled, and an effort was made to nominate Millard Fillmore, of New York, who had filled the office of President of the United States to the satisfaction of the people, from the death of President Taylor, in 1849, to the expiration of the term, in 1853. Mr. Fillmore had made himself obnoxious to the Republicans by signing the Fugitive Slave Bill. To the Native Americans he was acceptable, because of his Native American proclivities. The latter party desired to exclude the slavery question from the convention, and nominate only on Native American principles. This did not suit the other branch of the convention, as the Republicans had many foreigners in their ranks, enemies to Native American principles, who were unfavorable to slavery and opposed to its extension; they must, therefore, have a

candidate embodying, to a certain extent, the above principles. After a session of a few days, the Republican portion of the convention withdrew, held a meeting and appointed a convention to meet in New York City, in the following June. The Native American convention nominated Millard Fillmore, of New York, as their candidate, and then adjourned.

The Convention appointed for June assembled, and after adopting a platform, nominated John C. Fremont as the candidate of the Republican party, and from thence henceforward it became a distinct and separate organization. It is supposed to have its origin in the long contest that took place in Congress, 1855, for Speaker of the House of Representatives, which resulted in the election of Nathaniel P. Banks, of Massachusetts. Its principles on the question of slavery may be thus briefly embodied:—Opposition to the extension of slavery, confining it strictly within its present bounds, but a non-interference with it in the localities where it now exists.

When the candidates were thus in the field, the slaveholding States threatened that if John C. Fremont was elected, it would be sufficient cause for their separation and withdrawal from the Federal Union. The contest was a severe one, and resulted in the defeat of the Republican party. James Buchanan was elected, and on the 4th of March, 1857, was inaugurated as President of the United States.

About this time a secret organization sprung up, entitled the Knights of the Golden Circle, whose avowed object was the overthrow of the Federal Government, and the creation of a Southern Confederacy. Its operations were confined mostly to the South, and but little attention was paid to it in the North. The country remained in peace and quietness until the Spring of 1860, when the political campaign for the Presidency was opened with vigor and unusual bitterness.

A HISTORY

OF THE

CIVIL WAR IN THE UNITED STATES.

CHAPTER I.

THE POLITICAL CAMPAIGN OF EIGHTEEN HUNDRED AND SIXTY.

Early in the year 1860, preparations were made by the different political parties to hold their National Conventions and nominate candidates for President of the United States, to be elected in the following November. The Democratic Convention met at the City of Charleston, S. C. It was a boisterous session, and several antagonistical elements were at work. A part of the delegates were determined that Mr. Douglas, of Illinois, should receive the nomination, while the remainder were as firm that Mr. Breckinridge, of Kentucky, then Vice-President of the United States, should be nominated. This antagonism resulted in the Convention failing to make a nomination, and it adjourned to meet in a few weeks following, at Baltimore; but before leaving Charleston, each wing of the party adopted a platform, which was re-adopted at Baltimore.

In order that the reader may clearly understand the position of the two wings of the Democratic party, we present the two platforms side by side:

DOUGLAS PLATFORM.

1. *Resolved*, That we, the Democracy of the Union, in Convention assembled, hereby declare our affirmance of the resolutions unanimously adopted and declared as a platform of principles by the Democratic Convention at Cincinnati, in the year 1856, believing that Democratic principles are unchangeable in their nature, when applied to the same subject matters; and we recommend, as the only further resolutions, the following:

Inasmuch as differences of opinion exist in the Democratic party as to the nature and extent of the powers of a Territorial Legislature, and as to the powers and duties of Congress, under the Constitution of the United States, over the institution of slavery within the Territories,

2. *Resolved*, That the Democratic party will abide by the decisions of the Supreme Court of the United States on the questions of Constitutional law.

3. *Resolved*, That it is the duty of the United States to afford ample and complete protection to all its citizens, whether at home or abroad, and whether native or foreign.

4. *Resolved*, That one of the necessities of the age, in a military, commercial and postal point of view, is speedy com-

BRECKINRIDGE PLATFORM.

Resolved, That the Platform adopted by the Democratic party at Cincinnati be affirmed, with the following explanatory resolutions:

1. That the government of a Territory organized by an act of Congress, is provisional and temporary; and during its existence, all citizens of the United States have an equal right to settle with their property in the Territory, without their rights, either of person or property, being destroyed or impaired by Congressional or Territorial legislation.

2. That it is the duty of the Federal Government, in all its departments, to protect, when necessary, the rights of persons and property in the Territories, and wherever else its Constitutional authority extends.

3. That when the settlers in a Territory having an adequate population, form a State Constitution, in pursuance of law, the right of sovereignty commences, and, being consummated by admission into the Union, they stand on an equal footing with the people of other States; and the State thus organized ought to be admitted into the Federal Union, whether its Constitution prohibits or recognizes the institution of slavery.

4. That the Democratic par-

munication between the Atlantic and Pacific States; and the Democratic party pledge such Constitutional Government aid as will insure the construction of a railroad to the Pacific coast at the earliest practicable period.

5. *Resolved*, That the Democratic party are in favor of the acquisition of the island of Cuba, on such terms as shall be honorable to ourselves and just to Spain.

6. *Resolved*, That the enactments of State Legislatures to defeat the faithful execution of the Fugitive Slave Law, are hostile in character, subversive of the Constitution, and revolutionary in their effect.

7. *Resolved*, That it is in accordance with the true interpretation of the Cincinnati Platform, that, during the existence of the Territorial Governments, the measure of restriction, whatever it may be, imposed by the Federal Constitution on the power of the Territorial Legislature over the subject of the domestic relations, as the same has been, or shall hereafter be, finally determined by the Supreme Court of the United States, shall be respected by all good citizens, and enforced with promptness and fidelity by every branch of the General Government.

ty are in favor of the acquisition of the island of Cuba, on such terms as shall be honorable to ourselves and just to Spain, at the earliest practicable moment.

5. That the enactments of State Legislatures to defeat the faithful execution of the Fugitive Slave Law are hostile in character, subversive of the Constitution, and revolutionary in their effect.

6. That the Democracy of the United States recognize it as the imperative duty of this Government to protect the naturalized citizen in all his rights, whether at home or in foreign lands, to the same extent as its native-born citizens.

Whereas, one of the greatest necessities of the age in a political, commercial, postal and military point of view, is a speedy communication between the Pacific and Atlantic coasts; therefore, be it

Resolved, That the Democratic party do hereby pledge themselves to use every means in their power to secure the passage of some bill, to the extent of the Constitutional authority of Congress, for the construction of a Pacific Railroad from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean, at the earliest practicable moment.

As both the Douglas and Breckinridge Conventions re-adopted the Democratic Platform of 1856, the re-publication of that document seems necessary to an understanding of the present position of the "National Democracy."

DEMOCRATIC PLATFORM, ADOPTED AT CINCINNATI, JUNE 6,
1856.

Resolved, That the American Democracy place their trust in the intelligence, the patriotism and the discriminating justice of the American people.

Resolved, That we regard this as a distinctive feature of our political creed, which we are proud to maintain before the world as a great moral element in a form of government springing from and upheld by the popular will; and we contrast it with the creed and practice of Federalism, under whatever name or form, which seeks to palsy the will of the constituent, and which conceives no imposture too monstrous for the popular credulity.

Resolved, therefore, That, entertaining these views, the Democratic party of this Union, through their delegates, assembled in general convention, coming together in a spirit of concord, of devotion to the doctrines and faith of a free representative government, and appealing to their fellow-citizens for the rectitude of their intentions, renew and reassert before the American people the declarations of principles avowed by them, when, on former occasions, in general convention, they have presented their candidates for the popular suffrage.

1. That the Federal Government is one of limited power, derived solely from the Constitution, and the grants of power made therein ought to be strictly construed by all the departments and agents of the Government, and that it is inexpedient and dangerous to exercise doubtful constitutional powers.

2. That the Constitution does not confer upon the General Government the power to commence and carry on a general system of internal improvements.

3. That the Constitution does not confer authority upon the Federal Government, directly or indirectly, to assume the debts of the several States, contracted for local and internal improvements, or other State purposes, nor would such assumption be just or expedient.

4. That justice and sound policy forbid the Federal Government to foster one branch of industry to the detriment of another ; or to cherish the interest of one portion of our common country to the detriment of another ; that every citizen and every section of the country has a right to demand and insist upon an equality of rights and privileges, and a complete and ample protection of persons and property from domestic violence and foreign aggression.

5. That it is the duty of every branch of the Government to enforce and practice the most rigid economy in conducting our public affairs, and that no more revenue ought to be raised than is required to defray the necessary expenses of the Government, and provide for the gradual but certain extinction of the public debt.

6. That the proceeds of the public lands ought to be sacredly applied to the national objects specified in the Constitution, and that we are opposed to any law for the distribution of such proceeds among the States, as alike inexpedient in policy, and repugnant to the Constitution.

7. That Congress has no power to charter a National Bank ; that we believe such an institution one of deadly hostility to the best interests of this country, dangerous to our republican institutions and the liberties of the people, and calculated to place the business of the country within the control of a concentrated money power, and above the laws and will of the people ; and the results of the Democratic legislation in this and all other financial measures upon which issues have been made between the two political parties of the country, have demonstrated to candid and practical men of all parties their soundness, safety and utility in all business pursuits.

8. That the separation of the moneys of the Government from banking institutions is indispensable to the safety of the funds of the Government and the rights of the people.

9. That we are decidedly opposed to taking from the President the qualified veto power by which he is enabled, under restrictions and responsibilities amply sufficient to guard the public interest, to suspend the passage of a bill whose merits cannot secure the approval of two-thirds of the Senate and House of Representatives, until the judgment of the people can be obtained thereon, and which has saved the American people from the corrupt and tyrannical dominion of the Bank

of the United States, and from a corrupting system of general internal improvements.

10. That the liberal principles embodied by Jefferson in the Declaration of Independence, and sanctioned in the Constitution, which makes ours the land of liberty and the asylum of the oppressed of every nation, have ever been cardinal principles in the Democratic faith; and every attempt to abridge the privilege of becoming citizens and the owners of soil among us ought to be resisted with the same spirit which swept the alien and sedition laws from our statute books.

And whereas, Since the foregoing declaration was uniformly adopted by our predecessors in national conventions, an adverse political and religious test has been secretly organized by a party claiming to be exclusively Americans, and it is proper that the American Democracy should clearly define its relations thereto; and declare its determined opposition to all secret political societies, by whatever name they may be called.

Resolved, That the foundation of this Union of States having been laid in, and its prosperity, expansion and pre-eminent example in free government, built upon entire freedom in matters of religious concernment, and no respect of persons in regard to rank, or place of birth, no party can justly be deemed national, constitutional, or in accordance with American principles, which bases its exclusive organization upon religious opinions and accidental birth-place. And hence a political crusade in the nineteenth century, and in the United States of America, against Catholics and foreign-born, is neither justified by the past history or future prospects of the country, nor in unison with the spirit of toleration and enlightened freedom, which peculiarly distinguishes the American system of popular government.

Resolved, That we reiterate with renewed energy of purpose the well considered declarations of former conventions of upon the sectional issue of domestic slavery, and concerning the reserved rights of the States—

1. That Congress has no power under the Constitution to interfere with or control the domestic institutions of the several States, and that all such States are the sole and proper judges of everything appertaining to their own affairs not prohibited by the Constitution; that all efforts of the abolition-

ists or others made to induce Congress to interfere with questions of slavery, or to take incipient steps in relation thereto, are calculated to lead to the most alarming and dangerous consequences, and that all such efforts have an inevitable tendency to diminish the happiness of the people, and endanger the stability and permanency of the Union, and ought not to be countenanced by any friend of our political institutions.

2. That the foregoing proposition covers and was intended to embrace the whole subject of Slavery agitation in Congress, and therefore the Democratic party of the Union, standing on this national platform, will abide by and adhere to a faithful execution of the acts known as the Compromise measures, settled by the Congress of 1850, "the act for reclaiming fugitives from service or labor" included, which act being designed to carry out an express provision of the Constitution, cannot, with fidelity thereto, be repealed, or so changed as to destroy or impair its efficiency.

3. That the Democratic party will resist all attempts at renewing in Congress, or out of it, the agitation of the Slavery question, under whatever shape or color the attempt may be made.

4. That the Democratic party will faithfully abide by and uphold the principles laid down in the Kentucky and Virginia resolutions of 1798 and 1799, and in the report of Mr. Madison to the Virginia Legislature in 1799—that it adopts these principles as constituting one of the main foundations of its political creed, and is resolved to carry them out in their obvious meaning and import.

And that we may the more distinctly meet the issue on which a sectional party, subsisting exclusively on Slavery agitation, now relies to test the fidelity of the people, North and South, to the Constitution and the Union—

1. *Resolved*, That claiming fellowship with and desiring the co-operation of all who regard the preservation of the Union under the Constitution as the paramount issue, and repudiating all sectional parties and platforms concerning domestic Slavery, which seek to embroil the States and incite to treason and armed resistance to law in the Territories, and whose avowed purpose, if consummated, must end in civil war and disunion, the American Democracy recognize and adopt the

principles contained in the organic laws establishing the Territories of Nebraska and Kansas, as embodying the only sound and safe solution of the Slavery question, upon which the great national idea of the people of this whole country can repose in its determined conservation of the Union, and non-interference of Congress with Slavery in the Territories or in the District of Columbia.

2. That this was the basis of the compromises of 1850, confirmed by both the Democratic and Whig parties in national conventions, ratified by the people in the elections of 1852, and rightly applied to the organization of the Territories in 1854.

3. That by the uniform application of the Democratic principle to the organization of Territories, and the admission of new States, with or without domestic Slavery, as they may elect, the equal rights of all the States will be preserved intact, the original compacts of the Constitution maintained inviolate, and the perpetuity and expansion of the Union insured to its utmost capacity of embracing, in peace and harmony, every future American State that may be constituted or annexed with a Republican form of government.

Resolved, That we recognize the right of the people of all the Territories, including Kansas and Nebraska, acting through the legally and fairly expressed will of the majority of the actual residents, and whenever the number of their inhabitants justifies it, to form a constitution, with or without domestic Slavery, and be admitted into the Union upon terms of perfect equality with the other States.

Resolved, finally, That in view of the condition of the popular institutions in the Old World (and the dangerous tendencies of sectional agitation, combined with the attempts to enforce civil and religious disabilities against the rights of acquiring and enjoying citizenship in our own land,) a high and sacred duty is involved with increased responsibility upon the Democratic party of this country, as the party of the Union, to uphold and maintain the rights of every State, and thereby the Union of the States—and to sustain and advance among us constitutional liberty, by continuing to resist all monopolies and exclusive legislation for the benefit of the few at the expense of the many, and by a vigilant and constant adherence to those principles and compromises of the Consti-

tution—which are broad enough and strong enough to embrace and uphold the Union as it was, the Union as it is, and the Union as it shall be—in the full expression of the energies and capacity of this great and progressive people.

1. *Resolved*, That there are questions connected with the foreign policy of this country, which are inferior to no domestic question whatever. The time has come for the people of the United States to declare themselves in favor of free seas, and progressive free trade throughout the world, and, by solemn manifestations, to place their moral influence at the side of their successful example.

2. *Resolved*, That our geographical and political position with reference to the other States of this continent, no less than the interest of our commerce and the development of our growing power, requires that we should hold sacred the principles involved in the Monroe doctrine. Their bearing and import admit of no misconstruction, and should be applied with unbending rigidity.

3. *Resolved*, That the great highway, which nature as well as the assent of States most immediately interested in its maintenance, has marked out for free communication between the Atlantic and Pacific oceans, constitutes one of the most important achievements realized by the spirit of modern times, in the unconquerable energy of our people; and that result would be secured by a timely and efficient exertion of the control which we have the right to claim over it, and no power on earth should be suffered to impede or clog its progress by any interference with relations that it may suit our policy to establish between our Government and the government of the States within whose dominion it lies; we can under no circumstances surrender our preponderance in the adjustment of all questions arising out of it.

4. *Resolved*, That in view of so commanding an interest, the people of the United States cannot but sympathize with the efforts which are being made by the people of Central America to regenerate that portion of the continent which covers the passage across the interoceanic isthmus.

5. *Resolved*, That the Democratic party will expect of the next Administration that every proper effort be made to insure our ascendancy in the Gulf of Mexico, and to maintain permanent protection to the great outlets through which are emptied

into its waters the products raised out of the soil and the commodities created by the industry of the people of our Western valleys and of the Union at large.

Resolved, That the Administration of Franklin Pierce has been true to Democratic principles, and therefore true to the great interests of the country; in the face of violent opposition, he has maintained the laws at home, and vindicated the rights of American citizens abroad; and therefore we proclaim our unqualified admiration of his measures and policy.

When the Democratic Convention re-assembled at Baltimore, June the 18th, the antagonism still existed, and the Breckinridge portion withdrew. The Douglas wing then nominated Stephen A. Douglas, and adjourned. The Breckinridge wing met at Baltimore, June 28th, and nominated John C. Breckinridge as their candidate. The Democratic party was now divided against itself, and in this dismembered condition went into the political campaign. Both wings had re-adopted the Cincinnati platform of 1856, and professed to be governed by its principles. The division seemed to be caused more by personal friendship for the candidates, than by a difference of opinion on the doctrine and principles of the party. Mr. Douglas was an opponent of the administration of Mr. Buchanan, while Mr. Breckinridge was a firm adherent and supporter of it. Whatever differences may have existed in the party, it united in charging the Republican party with sectionalism, and with a desire to elect a President exclusively for the North, and in opposition to the interest and well-being of the South. Again were heard the threats from the Southern States, and especially from South Carolina, that if the Republican party elected a President, it would be a good and sufficient cause for the withdrawal of these States from the Federal Union.

The Republican Convention met in Chicago, May the 18th, and adopted the following platform:

REPUBLICAN NATIONAL PLATFORM, ADOPTED AT CHICAGO,
1860.

Resolved, That we, the delegated representatives of the Republican electors of the United States, in convention assembled, in discharge of the duty we owe to our constituents and our country, unite in the following declarations :

1. That the history of the nation, during the last four years, has fully established the propriety and necessity of the organization and perpetuation of the Republican party, and that the causes which called it into existence are permanent in their nature, and now, more than ever before, demand its peaceful and constitutional triumph.

2. That the maintenance of the principles promulgated in the Declaration of Independence and embodied in the Federal Constitution, "That all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness: that to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed," is essential to the preservation of our Republican institutions; and that the Federal Constitution, the rights of the States, and the Union of the States, must and shall be preserved.

3. That to the Union of the States this nation owes its unprecedented increase in population, its surprising development of material resources, its rapid augmentation of wealth, its happiness at home and its honor abroad; and we hold in abhorrence all schemes for Disunion, come from whatever source they may: and we congratulate the country that no Republican member of Congress has uttered or countenanced the threats of Disunion so often made by Democratic members, without rebuke and with applause from their political associates; and we denounce those threats of Disunion, in case of a popular overthrow of their ascendancy, as denying the vital principles of a free government, and as an avowal of contemplated treason, which it is the imperative duty of an indignant people sternly to rebuke and for ever silence.

4. That the maintenance inviolate of the rights of the States, and especially the right of each State to order and control its own domestic institutions according to its own judgment exclu-

sively, is essential to that balance of powers on which the perfection and endurance of our political fabric depends; and we denounce the lawless invasion by armed force of the soil of any State or Territory, no matter under what pretext, as among the gravest of crimes.

5. That the present Democratic Administration has far exceeded our worst apprehensions, in its measureless subserviency to the exactions of a sectional interest, as especially evinced in its desperate exertions to force the infamous Lecompton Constitution upon the protesting people of Kansas; in construing the personal relation between master and servant to involve an unqualified property in persons; in its attempted enforcement, everywhere, on land and sea, through the intervention of Congress and of the Federal Courts of the extreme pretensions of a purely local interest; and in its general and unvarying abuse of the power intrusted to it by a confiding people.

6. That the people justly view with alarm the reckless extravagance which pervades every department of the Federal Government; that a return to rigid economy and accountability is indispensable to arrest the systematic plunder of the public treasury by favored partisans, while the recent startling developments of frauds and corruptions at the Federal metropolis, show that an entire change of administration is imperatively demanded.

7. That the new dogma, that the Constitution, of its own force, carries slavery into any or all of the Territories of the United States, is a dangerous political heresy, at variance with the explicit provisions of that instrument itself, with contemporaneous exposition, and with legislative and judicial precedent; is revolutionary in its tendency, and subversive of the peace and harmony of the country.

8. That the normal condition of all the Territory of the United States is that of freedom; that as our Republican fathers, when they had abolished slavery in all our national territory, ordained "that no person should be deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law," it becomes our duty, by legislation, whenever such legislation is necessary, to maintain this provision of the Constitution against all attempts to violate it; and we deny the authority of Congress, of a territorial legislature, or of any individuals,

to give legal existence to slavery in any Territory of the United States.

9. That we brand the recent re-opening of the African slave trade, under the cover of our national flag, aided by perversions of judicial power, as a crime against humanity and a burning shame to our country and age; and we call upon Congress to take prompt and efficient measures for the total and final suppression of that execrable traffic.

10. That in the recent vetoes, by their Federal Governors, of the Acts of the Legislatures of Kansas and Nebraska, prohibiting slavery in those Territories, we find a practical illustration of the boasted Democratic principle of Non-Intervention and Popular Sovereignty, embodied in the Kansas-Nebraska bill, and a demonstration of the deception and fraud involved therein.

11. That Kansas should, of right, be immediately admitted as a State under the Constitution recently formed and adopted by her people, and accepted by the House of Representatives.

12. That, while providing revenue for the support of the General Government by duties upon imports, sound policy requires such an adjustment of these imports as to encourage the development of the industrial interest of the whole country; and we commend that policy of national exchanges which secures to the working men liberal wages, to agriculture remunerative prices, to mechanics and manufacturers an adequate reward for their skill, labor and enterprise, and to the nation commercial prosperity and independence.

13. That we protest against any sale or alienation to others of the public lands held by actual settlers, and against any view of the Homestead policy which regards the settlers as paupers or suppliants for public bounty: and we demand the passage by Congress of the complete and satisfactory Homestead measure which has already passed the House.

14. That the Republican party is opposed to any change in our Naturalization Laws or any State legislation by which the rights of citizenship hitherto accorded to immigrants from foreign lands shall be abridged or impaired; and in favor of giving a full and efficient protection to the rights of all classes of citizens, whether native or naturalized, both at home and abroad.

15. That appropriations by Congress for river and harbor

improvements of a national character, required for the accommodation and security of an existing commerce, are authorized by the Constitution, and justified by the obligations of Government to protect the lives and property of its citizens.

16. That a railroad to the Pacific Ocean is imperatively demanded by the interest of the whole country; that the Federal Government ought to render immediate and efficient aid in its construction; and that, as preliminary thereto, a daily overland mail should be promptly established.

17. Finally, having thus set forth our distinctive principles and views, we invite the coöperation of all citizens, however differing on other questions, who substantially agree with us in their affirmance and support.

Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois, and Hannibal Hamlin, of Maine, both Northern men, were nominated, and with these candidates the party entered the field. The cry of Secession and Disunion became more loud and long, which gave rise to a third party, composed principally of disaffected Democrats and Native Americans, who took the name of the Union party. Delegates were elected to a National Convention, which assembled in Baltimore, May 9th, and adopted the following platform:

BELL-EVERETT PLATFORM, ADOPTED AT BALTIMORE, 1860.

Whereas, Experience has demonstrated that platforms adopted by the partisan conventions of the country have had the effect to mislead and deceive the people, and at the same time to widen the political divisions of the country, by the creation and encouragement of geographical and sectional parties; therefore

Resolved, That it is both the part of patriotism and of duty to recognize no political principle other than THE CONSTITUTION OF THE COUNTRY, THE UNION OF THE STATES, AND THE ENFORCEMENT OF THE LAWS, and that as representatives of the Constitutional Union men of the country, in National Convention assembled, we hereby pledge ourselves to maintain, protect and defend, separately and unitedly, these great principles of public liberty and national safety, against all enemies

at home and abroad, believing that thereby peace may once more be restored to the country, the rights of the People and of the States re-established, and the Government again placed in that condition of justice, fraternity and equality which, under the example and Constitution of our fathers, has solemnly bound every citizen of the United States to maintain a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity.

They then nominated John Bell, of Tennessee, and Edward Everett, of Massachusetts, as their candidates, and marched into the arena as a third combatent in the contest.

The war of politics now waxed hot, and the usual display of banners, torch-light processions, night speeches and meetings, sharp and bitter words, and midnight marches, characterized the whole campaign. The murmurings of the Slave States became louder and louder as they beheld the formidable front presented by the Republican party, and the determination that existed in its ranks to elect its candidates.

As November approached it became evident that the Republican party would be successful, and in anticipation of such an event, preparations were made in South Carolina to convene the Legislature as soon as the result of the election, should it be favorable to the Republicans, became known. The electoral vote of all the Northern States, concentrated on any one candidate, would secure his election, and the unanimity that existed in the Republican ranks, clearly indicated such a result.

The election took place, Lincoln and Hamlin, the Republican candidates, were elected, every Free State voting for them, while the Slave States were divided between the three remaining candidates.

Below we give the electoral vote.

ELECTORAL VOTE FOR PRESIDENT.

<i>For Lincoln and Hamlin.</i>				<i>For Breckinridge and Lane.</i>			
California,	-	-	4	Alabama,	-	-	9
Connecticut,	-	-	6	Arkansas,	-	-	4
Illinois,	-	-	11	Delaware,	-	-	3
Indiana,	-	-	13	Florida,	-	-	3
Iowa,	-	-	4	Georgia,	-	-	10
Maine,	-	-	8	Louisiana,	-	-	6
Massachusetts,	-	-	13	Maryland,	-	-	8
Michigan,	-	-	6	Mississippi,	-	-	7
Minnesota,	-	-	4	North Carolina,	-	-	10
New Hampshire,	-	-	5	South Carolina,	-	-	8
New Jersey,	-	-	4	Texas,	-	-	4
New York,	-	-	35				
Ohio,	-	-	23	Total,	-	-	72
Oregon,	-	-	3				
Pennsylvania,	-	-	27	<i>For Douglas and Johnson.</i>			
Rhode Island,	-	-	4	Missouri,	-	-	9
Vermont,	-	-	5	New Jersey,	-	-	3
Wisconsin,	-	-	5				
Total,	-	-	180	Total,	-	-	12
				<i>Recapitulation.</i>			
<i>For Bell and Everett.</i>				For Lincoln and Hamlin,	-	180	
Kentucky,	-	-	12	For Breckinridge and Lane,	-	72	
Tennessee,	-	-	12	For Bell and Everett,	-	39	
Virginia,	-	-	15	For Douglas and Johnson,	-	12	
Total,			39	Whole Electoral Vote,		303	
				Lincoln's majority over all,		57	

As soon as the result was known, South Carolina made preparations to withdraw from the Union, and establish herself as a free and independent nation.

CHAPTER II.

SECESSION OF SOUTH CAROLINA.

Immediately after the election of Lincoln, public meetings were held in the State of South Carolina, at which resolutions were adopted, declaring that it was incompatible with the interest, rights and dignity of the State to remain longer in the Federal Union, and submit to the rule of an abolition administration. It seemed from the language in which many of the resolutions were couched, that they believed it was the intention of the Republican party, when it came into power, at once to make a raid upon the State, and at one sweep brush slavery from its soil. This impression was not modified or denied by the political leaders in the State; but, on the contrary, the public mind was inflamed by the most bitter speeches, consisting of falsehoods and misrepresentations, the most unreasonable and improbable. Not a moment was taken for second thought or sober reflection; but with a wild, insane enthusiasm the State rushed forward into open insurrection.

The Federal Officers, with the exception of the Postmaster and the Collector of Customs, resigned their offices. The United States Senators, Hammond and Chestnut, resigned their seats in the Senate, and M. L. Bonham his seat in the House of Representatives.

The State Legislature assembled on the 27th day of November, and immediately provided for a State Convention, to meet on the 17th day of December. Delegates were elected and the Convention assembled at Columbia on the day appointed, and Gen. D. F. Jamison was chosen President. The small-pox at that time was prevailing in Columbia, and the Convention adjourned to meet in Charleston next day.

On the 20th of December the following ordinance was passed :

AN ORDINANCE

TO DISSOLVE THE UNION BETWEEN THE STATE OF SOUTH CAROLINA AND OTHER STATES UNITED WITH HER UNDER THE COMPACT ENTITLED "THE CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA."

We, the People of the State of South Carolina, in Convention assembled, do declare and ordain, and it is hereby declared and ordained, That the Ordinance adopted by us in Convention, on the 23d day of May, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty-eight, whereby the Constitution of the United States of America was ratified, and also, all Acts and parts of Acts of the General Assembly of this State, ratifying amendments of the said Constitution, are hereby repealed; and that the union now subsisting between South Carolina and other States, under the name of "The United States of America," is hereby dissolved.

The day following, R. W. Barnwell, J. H. Adams, and James L. Orr, were appointed Commissioners to proceed to Washington, to treat with the Federal Government for a division of public property, and the surrender of the forts in the harbor of Charleston, and a recognition of the Independence of South Carolina.

On the 24th, the following Declaration of Independence was passed by the Convention :

DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE OF SOUTH CAROLINA, DONE IN CONVENTION, DECEMBER 24, 1860.

The State of South Carolina, having determined to resume her separate and equal place among nations, deems it due to herself, to the remaining United States of America, and to the nations of the world, that she should declare the causes which have led to this act.

In the year 1765, that portion of the British Empire embracing Great Britain, undertook to make laws for the government of that portion composed of the thirteen American Colo-

nies. A struggle for the right of self-government ensued, which resulted on the 4th of July, 1776, in a Declaration by the Colonies, "that they are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States, and that as free and independent States, they have full power to levy war, to conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which independent States may of right do."

They further solemnly declare, that whenever any "form of government becomes destructive of the ends for which it was established, it is the right of the people to alter or abolish it, and to institute a new government." Deeming the government of Great Britain to have become destructive of these ends, they declared that the Colonies "are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all political connection between them and the States of Great Britain is, and ought to be totally dissolved."

In pursuance of this Declaration of Independence, each of the thirteen States proceeded to exercise its separate sovereignty; adopted for itself a constitution, and appointed officers for the administration of government in all its departments—legislative, executive and judicial. For purposes of defense, they united their arms and their counsels; and, in 1778, they entered into a league, known as the articles of confederation, whereby they agreed to intrust the administration of their external relations to a common agent, known as the Congress of the United States, expressly declaring, in the first article, "that each State retains its sovereignty, freedom and independence, and every power, jurisdiction, and right which is not, by this confederation, expressly delegated to the United States in Congress assembled."

Under this confederation the war of the Revolution was carried on, and on the 3d of September, 1783, the contest ended, and a definitive treaty was signed by Great Britain, in which she acknowledged the independence of the Colonies in the following terms:

ARTICLE I.—His Britannic Majesty acknowledges the said United States, viz:—New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia, to be free, sovereign, and independent States; that he treats with them

as such ; and for himself, his heirs and successors, relinquishes all claims to the government, proprietary and territorial rights of the same and every part thereof.

Thus was established the two great principles asserted by the Colonies, namely, the right of a State to govern itself, and the right of a people to abolish a government when it becomes destructive of the ends for which it was instituted. And concurrent with the establishment of these principles was the fact, that each Colony became and was recognized by the mother country as a free, sovereign and independent State.

In 1787, Deputies were appointed by the States to revise the articles of confederation, and on 17th September, 1787, these Deputies recommended for the adoption of the States the articles of union known as the Constitution of the United States.

The parties to whom this Constitution was submitted, were the several sovereign States ; they were to agree or disagree, and when nine of them agreed, the compact was to take effect among those concurring ; and the general government, as the common agent, was then to be invested with their authority.

If only nine of the thirteen States had concurred, the other four would have remained as they then were—separate, sovereign States, independent of any of the provisions of the Constitution. In fact, two of the States did not accede to the Constitution until long after it had gone into operation among the other eleven ; and during that interval, they exercised the functions of an independent nation.

By this Constitution, certain duties were charged on the several States, and the exercise of certain of their powers restrained, which necessarily implied their continued existence as sovereign States. But, to remove all doubt, an amendment was added, which declared that the powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people. On 23d May, 1788, South Carolina, by a convention of her people, passed an ordinance assenting to this Constitution, and afterward altered her own constitution, to conform herself to the obligations she had undertaken.

Thus was established, by compact between the States, a government, with defined objects and powers, limited to the express words of the grant, and to so much more only as was

necessary to execute the power granted. This limitation left the whole remaining mass of power subject to the clause reserving it to the States or to the people, and rendered unnecessary any specification of reserved rights.

We hold that the government thus established is subject to the two great principles asserted in the Declaration of Independence, and we hold further that the mode of its formation subjects it to a third fundamental principle, namely—the law of compact. We maintain that in every compact between two or more parties, the obligation is mutual—that the failure of one of the contracting parties to perform a material part of the agreement entirely releases the obligation of the other, and that, where no arbiter is provided, each party is remitted to his own judgment to determine the fact of failure with all its consequences.

In the present case that fact is established with certainty. We assert that fifteen of the States have deliberately refused for years past to fulfill their constitutional obligations, and we refer to their own statutes for the proof.

The Constitution of the United States, in its 4th article, provides as follows :

“No person held to service or labor in one State, under the laws thereof, escaping into another, shall, in consequence of any law or regulation therein, be discharged from such service or labor, but shall be delivered up, on claim of the party to whom such service or labor may be due.”

This stipulation was so material to the compact, that without it that compact would not have been made. The greater number of the contracting parties held slaves, and the State of Virginia had previously declared her estimate of its value by making it the condition of her cession of the territory which now compose the States north of the Ohio river.

The same article of the Constitution stipulates, also, for the rendition by the several States of fugitives from justice from the other States.

The general government, as the common agent, passed laws to carry into effect these stipulations of the States. For many years these laws were executed. But an increasing hostility on the part of the Northern States to the institution of slavery has led to a disregard of their obligations, and the laws of the general government have ceased to effect the objects of the

Constitution. The States of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New York, Pennsylvania, Illinois, Indiana, Ohio, Michigan, Wisconsin, and Iowa, have enacted laws which either nullify the acts of Congress, or render useless any attempt to execute them. In many of these States the fugitive is discharged from the service or labor claimed, and in none of them has the State government complied with the stipulation made in the Constitution. The State of New Jersey, at an early day, passed a law for the rendition of fugitive slaves in conformity with her constitutional undertaking; but the current of anti-slavery feeling has led her more recently to enact laws which render inoperative the remedies provided by her own law and by the laws of Congress. In the State of New York even the right of transit for a slave has been denied by her tribunals, and the States of Ohio and Iowa have refused to surrender to justice fugitives charged with murder and with inciting servile insurrection in the State of Virginia. Thus the constitutional compact has been deliberately broken and disregarded by the non-slaveholding States, and the consequence follows that South Carolina is released from its obligations.

The ends for which this Constitution was framed are declared by itself to be "to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, protect the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity."

These ends it endeavored to accomplish by a federal government, in which each State was recognized as an equal, and had separate control over its own institutions. The right of property in slaves was recognized by giving to free persons distinct political rights; by giving them the right to represent, and burdening them with direct taxes for three-fifths of their slaves; by authorizing the importation of slaves for twenty years, and by stipulating for the rendition of fugitives from labor.

We affirm that these ends for which this government was instituted have been defeated, and the government itself has been made destructive of them by the action of the non-slaveholding States. These States have assumed the right of deciding upon the propriety of our domestic institutions, and have denied the right of property established in fifteen of the

States and recognized by the Constitution; they have denounced as sinful the institution of slavery; they have permitted the open establishment among them of societies whose avowed object is to disturb the peace and to eloin the property of the citizens of other States. They have encouraged and assisted thousands of our slaves to leave their homes, and those who remain have been incited by emissaries, books and pictures to servile insurrection.

For twenty-five years, this agitation has been steadily increasing, until it has now secured to its aid the power of the common government. Observing the forms of the Constitution, a sectional party has found within that article establishing the executive department the means of subverting the Constitution itself. A geographical line has been drawn across the Union, and all the States north of that line have united in the election of a man to the high office of President of the United States, whose opinions and purposes are hostile to slavery. He is to be intrusted with the administration of the common government, because he has declared that that "government cannot endure permanently half slave, half free," and that the public mind must rest in the belief that slavery is in the course of ultimate extinction.

This sectional combination for the subversion of the Constitution has been aided in some of the States by elevating to citizenship persons, who, by the supreme law of the land, are incapable of becoming citizens, and their votes have been used to inaugurate a new policy hostile to the South, and destructive of its peace and safety.

On the 4th of March next, this party will take possession of the government. It has announced that the South shall be excluded from the common territory; that the judicial tribunals shall be made sectional, and that a war must be waged against slavery until it shall cease throughout the United States.

The guaranties of the Constitution will then no longer exist; the equal rights of the States will be lost. The slaveholding States will no longer have the power of self-government or self-protection, and the federal government will have become their enemies.

Sectional interest and animosity will deepen the irritation, and all hope of remedy is rendered vain by the fact that pub-

lic opinion at the North has invested a great political error with the sanctions of a more erroneous religious belief.

We, therefore, the people of South Carolina, by our delegates in Convention assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, have solemnly declared that the union heretofore existing between this State and the other States of North America is dissolved, and that the State of South Carolina has resumed her position among the nations of the world as a free, sovereign and independent State, with full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which independent States may of right do.

And, for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor.

On the same day, the remaining representatives in Congress from South Carolina vacated their seats, and returned home.

The greatest joy was manifested throughout the Southern States, at the secession of South Carolina. It will be seen by the following extracts, that the insurrection was wide-spread and deeply rooted, and the peaceable and successful egress of one State only emboldened the remainder, and made them more determined to carry out their designs.

MOBILE, Thursday, Dec. 20, 1860.

The secession of South Carolina was celebrated here this afternoon by the firing of a hundred guns, the cheers of the people, and a military parade. There is great rejoicing.

The bells are now ringing merrily, and the people are out in the streets by hundreds, testifying their joy at the triumph of secession. Many impromptu speeches are being made, and the greatest excitement everywhere exists.

MOBILE, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

There is an immense secession meeting here to-night. The wildest enthusiasm is displayed. The oldest men are taking a prominent part in the proceedings.

Many places are illuminated in honor of South Carolina to-night.

PENSACOLA, FLA., Thursday, Dec. 20, 1860.

The secession of South Carolina is greeted with immense enthusiasm here. One hundred guns are being fired in honor of the event.

MONTGOMERY, ALA., Thursday, Dec. 20, 1860.

Governor Moore has ordered one hundred guns to be fired at noon to-morrow, in honor of the secession of South Carolina.

NORFOLK, VA., Thursday, Dec. 20, 1860.

A large meeting of citizens was held at Ashland Hall last night. Resolutions were adopted recommending the holding of National and State Conventions; opposing coercion; favoring the arming of the State, and declaring against the opening of the African slave trade.

NEW ORLEANS, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

A general demonstration of joy on the secession of South Carolina occurred here to-day. One hundred guns were fired, and the Pelican flag unfurled. Impromptu secession speeches were made by leading citizens, and the Marseilles hymn and polkas were the only airs played. A bust of Calhoun was exhibited decorated with a cockade.

An actor announced the secession of South Carolina last night from the stage of the Varieties. It was received with enthusiasm.

CHARLESTON, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

There was a grand procession of Minute Men to-night, and several thousand citizens, strangers, firemen and military were in line, with music, banners, transparencies and reflectors. The procession formed in front of Secession Hall, and proceeded to the Mills House to serenade Gov. Pickens, and subsequently to William D. Porcher, President of the Senate, General Simmons, Speaker of the House, General Jamison, President of the Convention, and Mayor Macbeth, who acknowledged their thanks and compliments. The flag borne in front of the procession was that of Captain Berry of the steamer Columbia, hoisted off Governor's Island. The city was alive with pleasurable excitement, and a number of residences, newspaper establishments, and other public establishments were illuminated.

Mr. Cushing arrived last night, and remained five hours, and departed for Washington. The rumors are various as to his mission here.

The Legislature to-day changed the name of the Committee on Federal Relations to Foreign Relations, and also appointed a committee to report a style of State flag.

WILMINGTON, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

One hundred guns were to-day fired in honor of the secession of South Carolina.

PORTSMOUTH, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

Fifteen guns were fired to-day. The Palmetto flag was displayed at Norfolk.

BALTIMORE, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

South Carolina's secession produced not the slightest sensation here, one way or the other. People seemed relieved and cheerful, and the streets were gayly crowded and business was better. The prevailing sentiment seems to be that if the North now does right, and makes honorable, manly concessions, indicating an absolute determination to cultivate friendly feelings, and will repeal the obnoxious laws, the other Southern States will cheerfully meet them.

RICHMOND, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

The secession of South Carolina seems to give great satisfaction here. A movement is on foot to hoist the Palmetto flag, with fifteen stars, from the Custom House.

I am informed upon high authority that a paper containing a request to Mr. Botts to leave the State is being circulated for signatures. It has already received the signatures of many influential citizens.

NORFOLK, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

The Minute Men met on the stone bridge at 1 o'clock to-day and fired a salute of fifteen guns in honor of South Carolina. The Palmetto flag was hoisted by B. F. Thomas.

On the firing of the first gun, John Tyler, son of ex-President Tyler, after the firing had ceased, mounted the gun, and delivered a strong secession speech.

Many of the fair ladies of the city congregated near by to witness the salute, and joined in by waving handkerchiefs.

Norfolk is pledged to stand by South Carolina and the South.

We have just telegraphed President Charleston Convention as follows:

The Minute Men of Norfolk send greeting to South Carolina. With the glorious Palmetto flag thrown to the breeze and floating over our heads, we have just fired fifteen guns in honor of the first step taken by that gallant State, and emblematic, we hope, of coming events. All honor and glory to the gamecock of the South.

CHARLES HARRIS,

Chief of Minute Men of Norfolk.

MACON, Friday, Dec. 21, 1860.

We are jubilant over the secession of South Carolina. There is a grand procession of Minute Men, and bonfires, bells ringing, cannon firing, and Main street illuminated. Speeches have been made by J. R. Branham, R. A. Smith, C. Anderson, P. Tracy, and others.

CHAPTER III.

THE COMMITTEE OF THIRTY-THREE.

The act of disintegration was commenced by South Carolina, and the fearful calamity of the Union going to pieces was palpably present to the mind of every person. The only question was, whether this dismemberment should progress peaceably and quietly, or should the Government put forth its power to preserve itself? Upon this several other points arose, and upon which the opinions of the people at the North were divided. By the majority of the people, the Secession movement was regarded as a rebellion, and they used their influence to force the Government to so consider it, and deal with it accordingly. By others it was looked upon in the light of a revolution, and they desired it should be allowed to peaceably accomplish its object. One party looked forward to the incoming administration with hope, believing that then the power of the Government would be exerted to quell the disturbance, and bring back the apostate State. The people of the North quietly awaited the inauguration of Mr. Lincoln; but knowing that every day was precious, they felt that Secession was making such rapid strides that it would be almost impossible to arrest its progress. They looked upon the administration then in power as weak and imbecile, and not possessing the energy and sternness to deal properly with the difficulties and dangers that menaced it. It was a fact that Mr. Buchanan, the President, was surrounded by men who were in the interest and secrets of the Secessionists, men who occupied an extended influence and controlled his actions. No movement could be made against them, without its being immediately revealed to

the enemies of the Government. Being thus circumscribed in his actions, and not possessing firmness sufficient to command the confidence of the North, or the respect of the South, the Secession movement made great progress, crushing out and repressing all Union sentiment, until the majority of the Southern States were carried into the vortex.

South Carolina (in her own opinion) had cut herself loose from the Federal Union, and launched out as a separate and independent nation, so amending her Constitution as to allow her to make treaties of peace, wage war, and do all other acts that an independent and sovereign nation should do. Over this act there was great rejoicing, because it had been accomplished without opposition from the Federal Government. This timidity on the part of the Administration only emboldened the South, and for a time they verily believed that they could form a Confederacy, and have it acknowledged before the new Administration would come into power. To attain this object was undoubtedly one and the great cause of their precipitance and haste. Again, they (the leaders of the Secession movement) could operate on the minds of the people of the South, whose animosity to the North, and especially the Republicans, had been doubly excited and inflamed by the most improbable and unreasonable stories. It was urged upon the people that the party who elected Abraham Lincoln, were the rankest and vilest Abolitionists, angrily crouching in expectation, ready when they should come into power to discharge every slave in the Slave States from servitude.

We take the following extract from her declaration of rights, adopted by the Convention, on the 20th of December, 1860 :

The ends for which this Government was instituted have been defeated, and the Government itself made destructive by the action of the non-slaveholding States. Those States assumed the right of deciding on the propriety of our domestic

institutions. They denied the rights of property established in fifteen States, and recognized by the Constitution.

They have denounced as sinful the institution of slavery ; have permitted an open establishment of societies whose avowal and object are to disturb the peace and prosperity of the citizens of other States ; they have encouraged and assisted thousands of our slaves to leave their homes, and those who remain have been incited by emissaries, by books and pictures, to servile insurrection.

It was the evident design of the leaders to impress, in the strongest manner possible, upon the minds of the people, that the election of Mr. Lincoln to the Presidency, was a declaration of hostility to their interest and their rights, and it was no longer practicable, if possible, to remain in the Federal Union.

The people (as a mass) understood so little of the management of the Government, that they imagined its whole power could be exercised by the incoming Administration, to liberate their entire slave population. Their leaders would not suffer the people to wait until after the inauguration of Mr. Lincoln, and test the hostility or charity of the new Administration.

Immediately after the Ordinance of Secession was adopted, the Legislature of the State passed a law to place the State on a war footing. The appropriation amounted to \$2,500,000, and comprised the following items :

General officers.....	\$5,568
Field and other officers for ten regiments.....	100,228
Horses for all the above.....	4,128
10,000 privates' pay, rations and clothing.....	2,430,000
Musicians.....	97,200
Cavalry horses.....	288,000
Artillery horses.....	19,200

Total..... \$2944,,324

This did not include the cost of guns, pistols, swords, cannon, powder, and other essential requisites for a military establishment.

The laws of the United States, so far as applicable, were continued in operation by the Convention; but all officers were compelled to take a new oath, and swear allegiance to the new Sovereignty of South Carolina.

Commissioners were appointed to France and England, authorized to obtain, if possible, the recognition, by these powers, of the independent position of the Palmetto nation. Commissioners were also appointed to visit Washington, the Capitol of the United States, and treat with the Federal Government, concerning the property of the United States within the boundary of the Palmetto Government. In connection with these, Commissioners were appointed to visit the Slave States, and solicit their aid in forming and establishing a Confederacy of the Southern States.

South Carolina was now permanently settled on the course of Secession, and was running on a smooth road and at a rapid gait. The way seemed entirely clear, but ahead there were hidden difficulties, that her most wise and sagacious statesmen did not perceive.

Commissioners were traveling to and fro in the Slave States, holding Secession meetings and addressing the people in the strongest language, and using the most violent terms. Every Slave State was visited, and those whose Legislatures were not in session, the Governors were importuned to immediately assemble them.

The strongest efforts were made in Maryland to incite the people to rashness. Governor Hicks had withstood all the pressure brought against him, and seemed determined that his State, so long as was in his power to prevent it, should not leave the Federal Union. Mississippi took unusual interest in the subject, and appointed A. H. Handy a Commissioner to visit the State. Mr. Handy appeared in Baltimore on the 19th of December, 1860, and held a Secession meeting at the Mary-

land Institute Hall. From his address, on that occasion, we copy the following :

“By the election of Abraham Lincoln, the country was in a state of revolution ; not simply upon the fact of his election, but upon the platform of his election, which has expressed the determination to overthrow the Constitution and subvert the rights of the South. The purpose of Mississippi was not to destroy the Union, but preserve the Constitution and the Union. To assert otherwise was a calumny, and he stood there to denounce it as such. The Constitution was subverted, and all that remained was a few acts to carry out the pledges made by the party of Lincoln. Slavery was ordained by God and sanctioned by humanity. The dispensation of Providence is that the master shall stand as guardian of the slave. It was sanctioned by the revelation of God, and dictated by a benevolent humanity. That position the whole North deny, and say that there is no justification by which one man can hold property in his fellow man. That has grown in the minds of the Northern people until they persist that slavery is a sin before God and the world. That is the germ of the irreconcilable conflict which has been asserted by some of the leaders of the Black Republican party. The whole country, because of this conflict, is enveloped in gloom. Property, commerce, manufactures, and everything else were drooping, and the face of every man wore a gloom. But there had been no change in commerce, and all the elements of prosperity were still in the country. It had been announced that all the States must be free or slave, and that was the “irrepressible conflict.” The people of the South would not give up their slaves, for if they did the beautiful cotton fields would soon become barren wastes. The first act of the Black Republican party will be to exclude slavery from all the Territories, the District, the arsenals and the forts, by the action of the general Government. That would be a recognition that slavery is a sin, and confine the institution to its present limits. The moment that slavery is pronounced a moral evil—a sin—by the general Government, that moment the safety of the rights of the South will be entirely gone. Another principle in which Maryland is interested will be the abolition of the slave trade between the States, in the hope that the evil will become so great that the South will be obliged to abolish slavery in self-defense.”

This was the condition of things at the South. Now let us turn our attention a few moments to the North. The Secession of South Carolina had a depressing weight upon the Northern States, and though the State of South Carolina itself was not considered of much importance, the influence it would exercise on other States, in leading the way to a dissolution of the Union, was deeply felt. It was evident the slavery question, in connection with the depressed state of the Federal Government, brought about by the mismanagement of the two last Administrations, had brought this crisis upon the country. It was believed the South would show hostility to the Republican Administration; but it was not supposed it would result in an absolute dismemberment of the Union. The people could not believe that when it came to the test, the South would so far forget itself and the blessings it had enjoyed in the Union, and under the protection of the Federal Government, as to cut loose all connection without giving Mr. Lincoln a fair trial. It was believed that his conservative principles, and the fairness and impartiality with which he would administer the Government, would heal the dissensions, and prove to the Southern people that their rights and interests would be amply protected, and that they could live as well under a government administered by Republicans as if administered by any other party. But these hopes were disappointed, and then there was but one way left, and that was for the North to tender to their insulted and indignant brethren terms of peace. A great reaction in a few weeks had taken place in the North, and the slavery question, that had heretofore been discussed, argued and paraded with great show and pomp, had fallen under a ban, and was treated with disgust and contempt.

By the 20th of December, 1860, this reaction had already commenced in Massachusetts. Wendell Phillips, a champion

of the ultra Anti-Slavery party, addressed a meeting at Watertown, in the above State, and was hissed—a demonstration of opposition unprecedented in that locality. Handbills were posted about the town, calling upon the people not to let him speak. This spirit spread rapidly, and the agitators of this dangerous question suddenly found themselves greatly depreciated. In Boston, New York, Philadelphia, and in fact from one end of the North to the other, there was a strong and determined effort to suppress any and all public demonstrations upon the subject. In some instances it was necessary to call in the aid of the authorities, and though they were generally Republicans in principle, they freely and quickly responded to the call. It seemed the people had just awakened to the danger that menaced them, and were determined to break its force if possible.

Great hopes were entertained that Congress would pass some salutary measure that would heal the dissensions, and restore peace and harmony. There was a general feeling, that the Constitution of the United States should be so amended as to distinctly and emphatically settle the question of slavery, and drive it for ever from the arena of politics. Had the question at that time been submitted directly to the people, instead of being intrusted to bickering and squabbling politicians, there is but little doubt it would have been quickly settled.

Immediately after the assembling of Congress, the impending crisis was brought before the House of Representatives. A resolution was introduced and adopted, authorizing the Speaker to appoint a committee of one member from each State, to devise, if possible, some means to settle the difficulties. The resolution for the committee was introduced on the 4th of December, 1860, by Mr. Boteler, of Virginia, immediately after the President's message had been read. On the 7th, the Speaker announced the following committee :

<i>States.</i>	<i>Names.</i>	<i>Politics.</i>
Alabama.....	George S. Houston.....	Democrat.
Arkansas.....	Albert Rust.....	do
Connecticut....	Orris S. Ferry.....	Republican.
California.....	John C. Burch.....	Democrat.
Delaware.....	William G. Whitley....	do
Florida.....	George S. Hawkins.....	do
Georgia.....	Peter E. Love.....	do
Indiana.....	Wm. N. Dunn.....	Republican.
Illinois.....	William Kellogg.....	do
Iowa.....	Samuel R. Curtis.....	do
Kentucky.....	Francis M. Bristow....	Southern Opposition.
Louisiana.....	Miles Taylor.....	Democrat.
Massachusetts..	Chas. F. Adams.....	Republican.
Mississippi....	Reuben Davis.....	Democrat.
Maine.....	Freeman H. Morse.....	Republican.
Michigan.....	William A. Howard....	do
Missouri.....	John S. Phelps.....	Democrat.
Maryland.....	H. Winter Davis.....	Southern Opposition.
Minnesota.....	William Windon.....	Republican.
New York.....	James Humphrey.....	do
New Jersey....	John N. L. Stratton....	do
New Hampshire.	Mason W. Tappan.....	do
North Carolina.	Warren Winslow.....	Democrat.
Ohio.....	Thomas Corwin.....	Republican (ch'man.)
Oregon.....	Lansing Stout.....	Democrat.
Pennsylvania...	Jas. H. Campbell.....	Republican.
Rhode Island..	Christopher Robinson...	do
South Carolina..	Wm. W. Boyce.....	do
Tennessee.....	Thos. A. R. Nelson....	Southern Opposition.
Texas.....	A. J. Hamilton.....	Democrat.
Vermont.....	Justin S. Morrill.....	Republican.
Virginia.....	John S. Millson.....	Democrat.
Wisconsin.....	Cad. C. Washburn.....	Republican.

The Speaker desired to say that the parliamentary usage was to name on the committee the mover of the resolution under which the committee was ordered to be formed. He had omitted the name of Mr. Boteler at that gentleman's own request. He had endeavored to appoint the committee to the

best of his judgment, and at the earliest period, in view of the important business with which the committee was intrusted.

Mr. Hawkins, of Florida, declined to serve on the committee, as he believed his State would secede. In closing his remarks he said :

“Even if compelled by the rules of the House, or the recognized customs of it, to serve on the committee, I shall be but a very unimportant member of it, and certainly not a very efficient one. I know that I cannot bring myself to consent to act with the majority of that committee. At all events, if I must serve, I will be obliged to act with the minority, and to have an independent report of our own. As the object of the committee is one of unanimity, of peace, and altogether a Union saving matter, I must say, as I have said before, that I am opposed to anything of that kind. That day is passed. The time of compromise, I repeat, has passed for ever.”

From the 7th to the 11th, the discussion on the motion to excuse Mr. Hawkins, occupied a large portion of the time of the House, and finally resulted in a refusal to excuse him. He then declared he would not serve on the committee. A number of other Southern members also refused to serve, and on the 12th it was fully organized, and ready for business.

The subject of the crisis occupied the attention of the Senate, but did not seem to obtain much form, until the 13th, when Mr. Johnson, of Tennessee, introduced the following resolutions :

Whereas, The fifth article of the Constitution of the United States provides for amendments thereto ; therefore be it

Resolved, That the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, two-thirds of both Houses concurring, that the following amendments to the Constitution of the United States be proposed to the Legislatures of the several States, which, when ratified by the Legislatures of three-fourths of the States, shall be valid to all intents and purposes as a part of the Constitution :

That hereafter the President and Vice-President of the

United States shall be chosen by the people of the respective States in the following manner :

Each State shall be divided by the Legislature thereof into districts, equal in number to the whole number of Senators and Representatives to which each State may be entitled in the Congress of the United States, the said districts to be composed of contiguous territory, and to contain, as near as may be, an equal number of persons entitled to be represented under the Constitution, and to be laid off for the first time immediately after the ratification of this amendment, and afterwards at the session of the Legislature next ensuing the apportionment of the representatives by the Congress of the United States ; that on the first Thursday in August of the year 1864, and on the same day every fourth year thereafter, the citizens of each State who possess the qualifications requisite for electors of the most numerous branch of the State Legislatures, shall meet within their respective districts, and vote for a President and Vice-President of the United States : and the person receiving the greatest number of votes for President, and the one receiving the greatest number of votes for Vice-President, in each district, shall be holden to have received one vote, which fact shall be immediately certified by the Governor of the State, and to each of the Senators in Congress from such State, and to the President of the Senate and Speaker of the House of Representatives. The Congress of the United States shall be in session on the second Monday in October, in the year 1864, and on the same day every fourth year thereafter ; and the President of the Senate, in the presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, shall open all the certificates, and the votes shall be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes for President shall be President, if such number of votes be equal to a majority of the whole number of votes given : but if no person have such majority, then a second election shall be held on the first Thursday of the month of December then next ensuing, between the persons having the two highest numbers for the office of President, which second election shall be conducted, the result certified and the votes counted in the same manner as the first, and the person having the greatest number of votes shall be President ; but if two or more persons shall have received the greatest number of votes, the one receiving the greatest number of votes

in the greatest number of States shall be President. The person having the greatest number of votes for Vice-President at the first election shall be Vice-President, if such number be equal to a majority of the whole number of votes given; and if no person have such majority, then a second election shall take place between the persons having the two highest numbers on the same day that the second election is held for President, and the person having the highest number of votes for Vice-President shall be Vice-President: but if there should happen to be an equality of votes between the persons so voted for at the second election, then the person having the greatest number of votes in the greatest number of States, shall be Vice-President: but when the second election shall be necessary in the case of Vice-President, and not necessary in case of President, then the Senate shall choose a Vice-President from the persons having the two highest numbers at the first election, as is now prescribed in the Constitution, provided that the President to be elected in the year 1864, shall be chosen from one of the slaveholding States, and the Vice-President from one of the non-slaveholding States, and in the year 1868 the President shall be chosen from one of the non-slaveholding States, and so alternately the President and Vice-President every four years between the slaveholding and non-slaveholding States, during the continuance of the government.

SECT. 2. *And be it further Resolved*, That Article I., Sect. 3, be amended by striking out the word "Legislature," and inserting in lieu thereof the following words, viz: "Persons qualified to vote for members of the most numerous branch of the Legislature," so as to make the third section of said article, when ratified by three-fourths of the States, read as follows, to wit: The Senate of the United States shall be composed of two Senators from each State, chosen by persons who are qualified to vote for the members of the most numerous branch of the Legislature; their term shall be for six years, and each Senator shall have one vote.

SECT. 4. *And be it further Resolved*, That Article III., Section 1, be amended by striking out the words "good behavior," and inserting the following words, viz: "the term of twelve years;" and further, that said article and section be amended by adding the following thereto, "and it shall be the duty of the President of the United States, within twelve

months after the ratification of this amendment by three-fourths of all the States, as provided by the Constitution of the United States, to divide the whole number of judges, as near as may be practicable, into three classes." The seats of the judges of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the fourth year from such classification; of the second class, at the expiration of the eighth year; and of the third class, at the expiration of the twelfth year; so that one-third may be chosen every fourth year thereafter.

The Article, as amended, will read as follows:—

ARTICLE III., SECTION 1. The judicial power of the United States shall be vested in one Supreme Court, and in such inferior courts as Congress from time to time may ordain and establish. The Judges, both of the Supreme and inferior courts, shall hold their offices during the term of twelve years, and shall, at stated times, receive for their services a compensation which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office. And it shall be the duty of the President of the United States, within twelve months after the ratification of the amendment by three-fourths of all the States, as provided by the Constitution of the United States, to divide the whole number of judges, as near as may be practicable, into three classes. The seats of the judges of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the fourth year from such classification; of the second class, at the expiration of the eighth year; and of the third class, at the expiration of the twelfth year; so that one-third may be chosen every fourth year thereafter: *Provided, however*, that all vacancies occurring under the provisions of this Section, shall be filled by persons, one-half of whom shall be chosen from the slaveholding States, and the other half with persons chosen from the non-slaveholding States, so that the Supreme Court will be equally divided between the slaveholding and non-slaveholding States.

These resolutions were received with favor by the people, and seemed to be the healing balm that was to be applied to our wounded country. They lay, however, in a dormant condition, while other matters appeared to attract the attention of the Senate.

On the 18th, Mr. Crittenden, of Kentucky, offered the following resolutions :—

Whereas, Alarming dissensions have arisen between the Northern and Southern States as to the rights of the common territory of the United States, and it is eminently desirous and proper that the dissensions be settled by the constitutional provisions which give equal justice to all sections, and thereby restore peace; therefore,

Resolved, That by the Senate and House of Representatives, the following Article be proposed and submitted as an amendment to the Constitution, which shall be valid as part of the Constitution, when ratified by the Conventions of three-fourths of the people of the States :—

First. In all the Territories now or hereafter acquired north of latitude thirty-six degrees thirty minutes, slavery, or involuntary servitude, except for the punishment for crime, is prohibited; while in all the Territory south of that latitude slavery is hereby recognized as existing, and shall not be interfered with by Congress, but shall be protected as property by all departments of the Territorial Government during its continuance. All the Territory north or south of said line, within such boundaries as Congress may prescribe, when it contains a population necessary for a member of Congress, with a republican form of government, shall be admitted into the Union on an equality with the original States, with or without slavery, as the Constitution of the State shall prescribe.

Second. Congress shall have no power to abolish slavery in the States permitting slavery.

Third. Congress shall have no power to abolish slavery in the District of Columbia while it exists in Virginia and Maryland, or either; nor shall Congress at any time prohibit the officers of the Government or members of Congress, whose duties require them to live in the District of Columbia, bringing slaves there, and holding them as such.

Fourth. Congress shall have no power to hinder the transportation of slaves from one State to another, whether by land, navigable rivers, or sea.

Fifth. Congress shall have power by law to pay an owner who shall apply, the full value for a fugitive slave, in all cases when the Marshal is prevented from discharging his duty by

force or rescue, made after arrest. In all such cases the owner shall have power to sue the county in which the violence or rescue was made, and the county shall have the right to sue the individuals who committed the wrong, in the same manner as the owner could sue.

Sixth. No future amendment or amendments shall affect the preceding articles, and Congress shall never have power to interfere with slavery in the States where it is now permitted.

Mr. Crittenden believed that his resolutions would practically establish the Missouri Compromise, and drive for ever from Congress the question of slavery; that it would establish peace, and again unite the country in strong bonds of Union. His appeals in favor of his country were touching, and moved many who heard him in this trying crisis, to tears. But his efforts were unavailing. The tide of secession had set too strongly in, and all the eloquence and influence of this honored and respected statesman could not, for a single moment, arrest its progress.

Congress had set itself to work in earnest upon the momentous question; but there seemed to be an opposition and determination against any measure likely to produce a compromise. This opposition principally originated with the Southern members, who were determined to tear the Union to pieces at all hazards. Our Northern members were not in all cases as forbearing and gentle as they might have been, and in many instances, by thoughtless acts and harsh words, cut deeper the wounds that were already deep enough.

CHAPTER IV.

PRESIDENT BUCHANAN'S POSITION.

When Congress assembled on the 3d of December, 1860, the attention of the whole nation, from one extreme to the other, was turned upon the President and the Cabinet, wondering what position they would take in regard to the existing troubles. The President's Message was waited for in almost breathless silence, and it was frequently conjectured that it would favor the South. It was not for a moment supposed that Mr. Buchanan would assume a hostile and determined position toward the South, and by force attempt to prevent the secession of any one State. At this time South Carolina occupied but a threatening attitude that was portentous of a speedy secession, and a determined withdrawal from the Federal Union. The people generally believed that the President would vacillate, and, if possible, shirk the responsible question that was fast coming upon the Administration.

As soon as Congress was organized, the President's Message was submitted to that body, and simultaneously was telegraphed from one end of the United States to the other. In the North it was not received as a firm and determined document, while in the South it was received partially with contempt, and in some places regarded as rather menacing. It failed, however, to give satisfaction, and was considered as not meeting the important issue fairly.

After speaking of the general health and prosperity of the country, the President begins, and sums up, as far as possible, the causes which led to the pending difficulties. He speaks

of the circulation of handbills and circulars throughout the South by citizens of the North, and agitating the Slavery question for the last five and twenty years. He says:—

“This agitation has ever since been continued by the public press, by the proceedings of State and County conventions, and by abolition sermons and lectures. The time of Congress has been occupied in violent speeches on this never-ending subject; and appeals in pamphlet and other forms, endorsed by distinguished names, have been sent forth from this central point, and spread broadcast over the Union.

“How easy would it be for the American people to settle the slavery question for ever, and to restore peace and harmony to this distracted country! They, and they alone can do it. All that is necessary to accomplish the object, and all for which the Slave States have ever contended, is to be let alone, and permitted to manage their domestic institutions in their own way. As sovereign States, they, and they alone, are responsible before God and the world for the slavery existing among them. For this the people of the North are not more responsible, and have no more right to interfere, than with similar institutions in Russia or in Brazil. Upon their good sense and patriotic forbearance I confess I still greatly rely. Without their aid, it is beyond the power of any President, no matter what may be his own political proclivities, to restore peace and harmony among the States. Wisely limited and restrained as is his power, under our Constitution and laws, he alone can accomplish but little, for good or for evil, on such a momentous question.”

He then takes the ground, that the election of a President by the people does not justify secession or revolution, and more especially when that election has been conducted according to the strictest forms of law.

The question of carrying slaves into the Territories is met in the following language:—

“It is alleged, as one cause for immediate secession, that the Southern States are denied equal rights with the other States in the common Territories. But by what authority are

these denied? Not by Congress, which has never passed, and I believe never will pass, any act to exclude slavery from these Territories, and certainly not by the Supreme Court, which has solemnly decided that slaves are property, and, like all other property, their owners have a right to take them into the common Territories, and hold them there under the protection of the Constitution.

“So far, then, as Congress is concerned, the objection is not to anything they have already done, but to what they may do hereafter. It will surely be admitted that this apprehension of future danger is no good reason for an immediate dissolution of the Union. It is true that the Territorial Legislature of Kansas, on the 23d of February, 1860, passed in great haste an act, over the veto of the Governor, declaring that slavery ‘is, and shall be, for ever prohibited in this Territory.’ Such an act, however, plainly violating the rights of property secured by the Constitution, will surely be declared void by the judiciary, whenever it shall be presented in a legal form.”

After reviewing the rights of the people in the Territories, he treats upon the Fugitive Slave Law, and the enactments of the different States in regard to it. It is assumed that the enactments of those States, where they conflict with the law, are in violation of the Federal Constitution, and are, therefore, null and void. The constitutionality of the Fugitive Slave Law has been affirmed by all the tribunals before which it has come, with the exception of Wisconsin, and that has been reversed. It has been the law of the land from the days of Washington until the present moment. He continues:—

“Here, then, a clear case is presented, in which it will be the duty of the next President, as it has been my own, to act with vigor in executing this supreme law against the conflicting enactments of State Legislatures. Should he fail in the performance of this high duty, he will then have manifested a disregard of the Constitution and laws, to the great injury of the people of nearly one-half of the States of the Union. But are we to presume, in advance, that he will thus violate his duty? This would be at war with every principle of justice

and of Christian charity. Let us wait for the overt act. The Fugitive Slave Law has been carried into execution in every contested case since the commencement of the present administration, though often, it is to be regretted, with great loss and inconvenience to the master, and with considerable expense to the government. Let us trust that the State Legislatures will repeal their unconstitutional and obnoxious enactments. Unless this shall be done without unnecessary delay, it is impossible for any human power to save the Union.

“The Southern States, standing on the basis of the Constitution, have a right to demand this act of justice from the States of the North. Should it be refused, then the Constitution, to which all the States are parties, will have been wilfully violated by one portion of them in a provision essential to the domestic security and happiness of the remainder. In that event, the injured States, after having first used all peaceful and constitutional means to obtain redress, would be justified in revolutionary resistance to the government of the Union.”

The right of secession is reviewed, and the President follows the subject out at considerable length, denying that one State or States can legally and constitutionally secede from the Federal Union.

“In short,” he says, “the government created by the Constitution, and deriving its authority from the sovereign people of each of the several States, has precisely the same right to exercise its power over the people of all these States, in the enumerated cases, that each one of them possesses over subjects not delegated to the United States, but ‘reserved to the States respectively, or to the people.’”

“To the extent of the delegated powers the Constitution of the United States is as much a part of the Constitution of each State, and is as binding upon its people, as though it had been textually inserted therein. * * * * *

“But they did not fear, nor had they any reason to imagine, that the Constitution would ever be so interpreted as to enable any State, by her own act, and without the consent of her sister States, to discharge her people from all or any of their federal obligations.”

Having advanced the probable difficulties that might arise in the collection of the revenues and the administration of the Federal laws in the Southern States, he acknowledges the inability of the President to enforce the laws in a State where there are no Federal officers, and takes the ground that it would require additional legislation to empower the Chief Magistrate to use force to compel obedience to them. Resting here upon the theory that emergencies may soon arise requiring the force of arms, he advances the following opinion:—

“The question fairly stated is: Has the Constitution delegated to Congress the power to coerce a State into submission which is attempting to withdraw, or has actually withdrawn, from the Confederacy? If answered in the affirmative, it must be on the principle that the power has been conferred upon Congress to declare and to make war against a State. After much serious reflection, I have arrived at the conclusion that no such power has been delegated to Congress, or to any other department of the Federal Government. It is manifest, upon an inspection of the Constitution, that this is not among the specific and enumerated powers granted to Congress; and it is equally apparent that its exercise is not ‘necessary and proper for carrying into execution’ any one of these powers. So far from this power having been delegated to Congress, it was expressly refused by the Convention which framed the Constitution. * * * * *

“Without descending to particulars, it may be safely asserted that the power to make war against a State is at variance with the whole spirit and intent of the Constitution.”

In following out the argument, he concludes that the slavery question had reached and passed its culminating point; and if, in the midst of the existing trouble, the Union should perish, the damage would be irreparable.

The whole responsibility is thrown upon Congress, and the President asserts that that body can do much to heal the dissensions. In view of that declaration, he advances the three

following propositions, for the consideration of that law-making power :

“1. An express recognition of the right of property in slaves in the States where it now exists or may hereafter exist.

“2. The duty of protecting this right in all the common Territories throughout their territorial existence, and until they shall be admitted as States into the Union, with or without slavery, as their constitutions may prescribe.

“3. A like recognition of the right of the master to have his slave, who has escaped from one State to another, restored and ‘delivered up’ to him, and of the validity of the Fugitive Slave Law enacted for this purpose, together with a declaration that all State laws impairing or defeating this right, are violations of the Constitution, and are consequently null and void.”

Acting upon the recommendation of the Chief Magistrate, Congress appointed the Committee of Thirty-three in the House, and a similar committee in the Senate.

In a very short time, the President’s Message was lost beneath the accumulating difficulties, and the people turned from the ruling power to Congress, to give a check to the spreading evil. Though the burden of meeting the manifold troubles was thrown from the shoulders of the Administration upon Congress, yet there were points the President could not escape.

It was becoming palpable that the property of the Government would be seized by seceding States, and claimed as their own; or, at least, held by them until the Federal Government would negotiate for their delivery to those States. Fearful of assuming any hostile attitude toward the South, by sending reinforcements to weak points to protect them, he appealed to the Attorney General for advice, and his opinion of the law.

We make the following extracts from that opinion :

“Your right to take such measures as may seem to be

necessary for the protection of the public property, is very clear. It results from the proprietary rights of the Government as owner of the forts, arsenals, magazines, dock yards, navy yards, custom houses, public ships, and other property which the United States have bought, built, and paid for. Besides, the Government of the United States is authorized by the Constitution (Art. I., Sec. 8,) 'to exercise exclusive legislation in all cases whatsoever * * over all places purchased by the consent of the Legislature of the State in which the same shall be, for the erection of forts, magazines, arsenals, dock yards, and other needful buildings.' It is believed that no important public building has been bought or erected on ground where the Legislature of the State in which it is, has not passed a law consenting to the purchase of it, and ceding the exclusive jurisdiction. This Government, then, is not only the owner of those buildings and grounds, but, by virtue of the supreme and paramount law, it regulates the action and punishes the offences of all who are within them. If any one of an owner's rights is plainer than another, it is that of keeping exclusive possession and repelling intrusion. The right of defending the public property includes also the right of recapture after it has been unlawfully taken by another. President Jefferson held the opinion, and acted upon it, that he could order a military force to take possession of any land to which the United States had title, though they had never occupied it before; though a private party claimed and held it, and though it was not then needed nor proposed to be used for any purpose connected with the operations of the Government. This may have been a stretch of Executive power; but the right of retaking public property in which the Government has been carrying on its lawful business, and from which its officers have been unlawfully thrust out, cannot well be doubted; and when it was exercised at Harper's Ferry, in October, 1859, every one acknowledged the legal justice of it.

"I come now to the point in your letter which is probably of the greatest practical importance. By the act of 1807, you may employ such parts of the land and naval forces as you shall judge necessary, for the purpose of causing the laws to be duly executed, in all cases where it is lawful to use the militia for the same purpose. By the act of 1795, the militia may be called forth 'whenever the laws of the United States

shall be opposed, or the execution thereof obstructed in any State, by combinations too powerful to be suppressed by the ordinary course of judicial proceedings, or by the power vested in the Marshals.' This imposes upon the President the sole responsibility of deciding whether the exigency has arisen which requires the use of military force; and in proportion to the magnitude of that responsibility will be his care not to overstep the limits of his legal and just authority.

"Whether Congress has the constitutional right to make war against one or more States, and require the Executive of the Federal Government to carry it on by means of force to be drawn from the other States, is a question for Congress itself to consider. It must be admitted that no such power is expressly given; nor are there any words in the Constitution which imply it. Among the powers enumerated in Article I., Section 8, is that 'to declare war, grant letters of marque and reprisal, and to make rules concerning captures on land and water.' This certainly means nothing more than the power to commence and carry on hostilities against the foreign enemies of the nation. Another clause in the same section gives Congress the power 'to provide for calling forth the militia,' and to use them within the limits of the State. But this power is so restricted by the words which immediately follow, that it can be exercised only for one of the following purposes:—

1. To execute the laws of the Union; that is, to aid the Federal officers in the performance of their regular duties.

2. To suppress insurrections against the States; but this is confined, by Article IV., Section 4, to cases in which the State herself shall apply for assistance against her own people.

3. To repel the invasion of a State by enemies who come from abroad to assail her in her own territory. All these provisions are made to protect the States, not to authorize an attack by one part of the country upon another; to preserve their peace, and not to plunge them into civil war. Our forefathers do not seem to have thought that war was calculated 'to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity.' There was, undoubtedly, a strong and universal conviction among the men who framed and rati-

fied the Constitution that military force would not only be useless, but pernicious as a means of holding the States together.

“If it be true that war cannot be declared, nor a system of general hostilities carried on by the Central Government against a State, then it seems to follow that an attempt to do so would be *ipse facto* an expulsion of that State from the Union. Being treated as an alien and an enemy, she would be compelled to act accordingly. And if Congress shall break up the present Union by unconstitutionally putting strife and enmity and armed hostility between different sections of the country, instead of ‘domestic tranquility,’ which the Constitution was meant to insure, will not all the States be absolved from their federal obligations? Is any portion of the people bound to contribute their money or their blood to carry on a contest like that?

“The right of the General Government to preserve itself in its whole constitutional vigor by repelling a direct and positive aggression upon its property or its officers, cannot be denied. But this is a totally different thing from an offensive war to punish the people for the political misdeeds of their State Government, or to prevent a threatened violation of the Constitution, or to enforce an acknowledgment that the Government of the United States is supreme. The States are colleagues of one another, and if some of them shall conquer the rest, and hold them as subjugated provinces, it would totally destroy the whole theory upon which they are now connected.

“If this view of the subject be as correct as I think it is, then the Union must utterly perish at the moment when Congress shall arm one part of the people against another for any purpose beyond that of merely protecting the General Government in the exercise of its proper constitutional functions.

“I am, very respectfully, yours, &c.,

“J. S. BLACK.

“*To the President of the United States.*”

This opinion was given the President about the 20th of November, 1860, but was not made public until about the 9th of December. Notwithstanding the plain and explicit

character of the opinion, its advice was not followed by the Administration. It was well known that all the forts in the Southern States were in a weak and defenceless condition, but no efforts were made to strengthen them. It was equally evident that South Carolina would secede, and as her whole attitude had been menacing, it was considered by the people but just that it should be properly met. They had lost all faith and confidence in the Administration, and considered it absolutely unequal to the emergency. They were willing that powers should be assumed by the Executive to meet the extraordinary condition of things ; and if not lawful and legal at the moment, they stood ready to make them so.

The trouble now extended to the Cabinet, and about the 10th of December, Howell Cobb, of Georgia, resigned his position as Secretary of the Treasury, and returned to his State, to take part in the secession movement. Isaac Toucy, Secretary of the Navy, was appointed Secretary of the Treasury, *ad interim*, and, on the 12th, Philip F. Thomas, of Maryland, was appointed and confirmed by the Senate, and entered upon the discharge of his duties.

About the 14th, General Cass, Secretary of State, tendered his resignation to the President, and it was accepted. The disagreement occurred upon the question of sending reinforcements to the forts in Charleston harbor. General Cass was in favor of strengthening these positions in every possible manner ; while the President opposed it, imagining it would have the effect of precipitating the country into civil war. Attorney General Black was appointed to the vacant Secretaryship, *ad interim*, and was afterwards nominated to the Senate, confirmed, and entered upon his duties as Secretary of State.

CHAPTER V.

MAJOR ANDERSON EVACUATES FORT MOULTRIE.

The secession of South Carolina had taken the North by surprise, and for a short time there was little else than confused conjectures regarding the result of this peculiar proceeding. All eyes were turned upon the President, anxiously watching what move he would make to meet the catastrophe. But suddenly there burst upon the people a circumstance more startling and thrilling than the announcement that half the States had seceded could have created.

On the 18th of November, Major Robert Anderson, of the First Artillery Regiment of the regular army, was ordered to the command of Fort Moultrie, in Charleston harbor, to relieve Col. Gardner, who was ordered to Texas. Major Anderson was known to the War Department to be a brave and capable officer, and being a native of Kentucky, it was undoubtedly presumed by the Secretary of War, who was strongly in the interests of the Secessionists, that his sympathy would be with the South, and that immediately upon the successful secession of South Carolina, a demand being made, he would at once surrender to the State the forts under his command. But the wily and scheming Secretary of War had reckoned too widely, and subsequently found that the loyalty of Kentucky's brave son was like herself, too deep-rooted to be moved by the hollow cry of Secession.

At the time Major Anderson took command of the forts, there were stationed in them about one hundred soldiers, of the regular army. This little band was commanded by the

following officers :—Major Robert Anderson, 1st Regiment Artillery, commanding officer ; Assistant Surgeon, S. W. Crawford, Medical Staff ; Capt. Abner Doubleday, commanding Company E ; Lieut. Theodore Talbot, Lieut. Jefferson O. Davis, Lieut. Norman J. Hall, Adjutant and Quartermaster ; Engineer Corps, Capt. J. G. Foster ; Corps of Engineers in charge of Castle Pinckney and Fort Sumter, Lieuts. G. W. Snyder and Richard K. Meade, Assistants.

Workmen or laborers were employed in repairing the forts, to the number of about one hundred. It was conjectured, from time to time, whether the commanding officer would employ these men in case of an attack, but before the time it was necessary to require their services they were discharged.

The fortifications of Charleston harbor, consist of Fort Moultrie, Castle Pinckney, Fort Johnson, and Fort Sumter. Fort Moultrie is situated on a point of Moultrie Island, on the left hand side of the channel going out, and running into the mouth of the harbor, so as to perfectly command the channel, and within one-half mile of Fort Sumter, and bringing the latter fort under the command of its guns. Had it been completed, and in perfect order, with its guns all mounted and the place well garrisoned, it would have been impregnable. Fort Johnson is situated upon a point of James Island, at the left hand side of the channel, one and one-third miles from Fort Sumter. It was a place of minor importance, and attracted but little attention. Castle Pinckney is built on one corner of Shute's Folly Island, and is two and five-eighths miles from Fort Sumter, and near the City of Charleston. One-half mile from Fort Sumter, and running out almost in front of it, and commanding the channel, is a point of land known as Cummings' Point.

Fort Sumter is situated in almost a direct line between Forts Moultrie and Johnson, and is within easy range of their guns.

The plan of the fort is a truncated pentagon, with one side parallel to the adjoining shore, thus presenting an angle to the channel. Of the truncated angles, the eastern, western, and northern are simply formed into *Pan-coupées*, while the other two are formed of two small faces, making an angle of about fifteen degrees with the sides of the pentagon. At each intersection of the small faces is a sally-port. The height of the parapet above the water-line is sixty feet. On the eastern and western sides are the barracks for the privates, mess-hall, kitchen, &c. On the southern side are the officers' quarters, which are finished in very handsome style.

The fort is mounted with the heaviest guns of the United States service, arranged in three tiers, the two lower being casemates, and the upper barbette guns. The casemate guns are those which are fired from an embrasure in the scarp walls, and are protected from the enemy's *shells* by an arched bomb-proof covering overhead; the barbette, those which fire over the parapet, which exposes the cannoniers to the fire of the enemy, although, in this instance, the height of the ramparts is so great that there is comparatively no danger from the shot of an enemy's fleet. The armament consists of 140 pieces, placed in the following order:—The heaviest guns, such as the 32 and 64-pounders, on the first tier; 24 and 32-pounders on the second tier; Columbiads (8 and 10 inch) and heavy sea-coast mortars on the top of the ramparts.

The heaviest pieces are turned towards the harbor, the lighter towards the land side; which side is further protected by musketry, for which loop-holes are cut in the scarp wall. The number of each kind of gun is *about* thirty 64-pounders; the same number of 32-pounders; forty 24-pounders; ten of each calibre of Columbiad; ten 13-inch, and ten 10-inch mortars, capable of throwing about four thousand (4000) pounds of shot, and four thousand three hundred (4300) pounds of shell at each discharge.

On the terra-parade plain are situated two furnaces for heating shot. The magazines are situated on the inner sides of the sally-ports. The landing to the fort is on the southern, or land side, and is formed by a wharf projecting toward the shore, and also extending the length of that face.

The fort is abundantly supplied with fresh water from a well sunk at a great depth.

Major Anderson pushed forward the repairs on Fort Moultrie as rapidly as possible, so as to protect his little command from the vengeance he knew his loyalty would bring upon them from the State of South Carolina. His industry was frequently complained of by the Charleston papers, and the Government charged to order the repairs to cease, or the State would construe those acts as hostile and threatening. The work, however, continued until about the 25th of December, when the laborers were discharged.

The gallant commander of Fort Moultrie saw the storm of secession gathering thick and fast, and threatening every moment to burst upon the country in a wild, fearful torrent of ruin. In the North it was known that Major Anderson was by birth a Southern man, and his movements were watched with the greatest interest. What course would he pursue, if the State of South Carolina should secede and demand the surrender of the forts.

When it became inevitably fixed that South Carolina had seceded, Major Anderson watched for an auspicious moment, when he could transfer his little command to the more strong and secure position afforded by Fort Sumter. A constant watch was kept upon his movements, day and night, by officers about Charleston, to give the alarm should it be attempted, and, if possible, prevent it. They scarcely believed, however, that the Major would transfer his command upon his own responsibility, and knowing they possessed a faithful ally

in the Secretary of War, who, if orders were issued to occupy Fort Sumter, would instantly communicate it to the authorities of South Carolina, and the fort would be occupied by State troops before the order from the War Department could reach Major Anderson.

On the evening of December 25th, when all Charleston was occupied in holiday feasts, pleasures, and pastimes, talking of secession, and drinking the health of the Palmetto Nation, born but a few days before, Major Anderson was quietly transferring his troops from Fort Moultrie to Fort Sumter. So secret had he kept his intention of occupying Fort Sumter, that the troops were not aware of their destination, when embarked in two schooners that lay in waiting for them. Their voyage was but a half mile, when they debarked under the walls of Sumter. The guns in Fort Moultrie were dismounted, and the carriages destroyed. In fact, everything quickly destructible was destroyed, and the fort, when first visited after its evacuation, presented a mass of ruins, portions of which were still burning.

When the morning of the 26th shone bright and clear upon the harbor of Charleston, the people were astounded to behold the Federal flag waving over Fort Sumter. Instantly it flashed through the community, that Major Anderson had occupied the Fort, and as quickly it flashed from one end of the Union to the other. Throughout the North it startled the people, and took them by surprise, for they had not looked to the humble occupants of the forts in Charleston harbor to make the first strategical movement in favor of the Union. It sent a thrill of joy through the hearts of loyal men; and the name of Major Anderson, and the story of his noble deed, was the theme and the topic every where. Though the act was in a military sense of minor importance, to the cause of the Union it was one of magnitude, and had a powerful influ-

ence. The people had looked to the Administration to meet firmly the coming storm, but when they found it weak and frail, and bending to its oppressors, they turned, almost sickening, away. The thrilling intelligence from the midst of Secessia, robbed the dark clouds of half their terror, and proved that there were loyal hearts and strong arms to strike for the Union.

Throughout the South the most intense excitement prevailed, and South Carolina rose in all her majesty and dignity, and demanded the immediate return of Major Anderson and the troops to Fort Moultrie. Mr. Floyd, the Secretary of War, insisted that the Government had pledged itself that the *status* of the troops at Charleston should not be changed. This pledge he contended had been violated, for it was not imagined that Major Anderson had the courage to change the position of his command without the authority of his superior officer. But Major Anderson was loyal to his Government, and a good soldier, and seeing clearly the perilous position of his little command, he provided the best means at hand for its safety.

Immediately upon the reception of the news in Washington, that Major Anderson had occupied Fort Sumter, the Cabinet was called together. The members who favored the South, and backed by the Commissioners from South Carolina, demanded that the Major should be ordered back to Fort Moultrie. If the demand was not complied with, the refusal would be taken as a declaration of war, and hostilities would quickly follow. The President denied all previous knowledge of the movement, and seemed to waver under the pressure brought to bear against him. To appease the South, the order must be given—to satisfy the North, the Major must be sustained. For three days the matter occupied the attention of the Cabinet. Staunton, Black and Holt sustained Major

Anderson, and opposed his being ordered back to Fort Moultrie. On the 29th of December, a vote was taken. Messrs. Thompson, Thomas and Floyd, voting in the affirmative, and Messrs. Holt, Black, Staunton and Toucey, voting in the negative. Quickly following this decision, Mr. Floyd resigned the office of Secretary of War, and returned to Virginia. The conduct of Major Anderson was sustained, and the people felt that with the resignation of Mr. Floyd the Government was relieved of a great incubus.



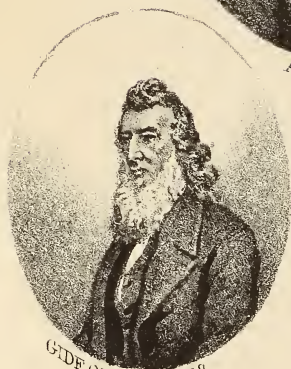
W. H. SEWARD.



SIMON CAMERON.



A. LINCOLN.



GIDEON WELLES.



S. P. CHASE.

CHAPTER VI.

SEIZURE OF THE FORTS AND ARSENAL AT CHARLESTON.

On the 26th of December, the Palmetto Nation adopted an emblem, whereby it should in all future ages be recognized as a sovereign and independent Nation.

The flag is a red ground, divided from end to end by a broad stripe of blue, and crossed in the centre by a similar stripe, leaving the four corners red. Upon the blue ground are fifteen white stars, a large one at the intersection of the blue stripes. In the upper right-hand corner a palmetto tree, and to the right of it a crescent. The flag is not beautiful, nor does it seem to partake or have about it that appearance of civilization which has generally characterized the productions of modern days. It seems to have been formed more after the fashion of the banners of the Middle Ages, when they bore upon their very face the brazen expression of oppression and bloody conquest. This emblem of nationality was supposed to be the centre around which the Southern States would cluster with the most heartfelt enthusiasm, and bless the mind as inspired that conceived the plan, and canonize the man who gave shape to a banner that was to lead the people of the South from oppression and tyranny, and their armies to conquest and glory.

At this time the Revenue Cutter Aiken, belonging to the United States service, commanded by N. L. Coste, a native of South Carolina, was lying in the harbor of Charleston. On the 27th of December he managed to surrender the vessel to the State authorities, who immediately took possession of

it, in the name of the Independent State of South Carolina. He attempted to excuse himself, upon the plea that he was not in command at the time, having a few days previously resigned his commission in the Federal Navy.

The excitement in the City of Charleston on the morning of December 28th, is perhaps without a parallel in the pages of history. The people seemed absolutely frantic; wild about something, and they scarcely knew what. Had an earthquake shaken their homes with terrible fury, it might have created more consternation, but could not have produced a more ungovernable and wild confusion. The Stars and Stripes were waving over Fort Sumter, and Major Anderson and his little band of patriots were safely ensconced behind its walls. This skillful movement infuriated the secession leaders, and they urged the people that the Government had already commenced a war of aggression and tyranny upon them. It was necessary to do this, in order to properly fix the minds of the people in the proper channel to meet the events that the leaders foresaw would follow.

The Convention was immediately called together, but it took no action, further than to express its indignation at what it considered an act of aggression and invasion. Individually, however, the members determined to stand by the Governor, and sustain his acts, though he should lead the State into immediate hostility with the Federal Government.

As if in anticipation of the event now brought about, the leaders had placed the State on a war footing, and the militia had been organized and drilled for military service. An order was issued by Governor Pickens, for the military to hold themselves in readiness to march, it being determined to occupy the vacated forts. In the afternoon the excitement had somewhat subsided, and the companies began to assemble and prepare to embark. The first detachment was ordered to

occupy Castle Pinckney, and was under the command of Col. J. J. Pettigrew. It was composed of three companies of the Rifle Regiment, and numbered about two hundred men. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon the troops were taken on board the steamer *Nina*, and passed over to Castle Pinckney, and in a short time the Palmetto flag was waving above its walls. The fort was entirely forsaken, the ammunition removed and the guns spiked. The fort was of no value, but they kept possession of it, and immediately commenced repairs.

At 7 o'clock the steamer *Nina* was again at the wharf, and took on board a detachment to occupy Fort Moultrie. It was composed of the Marion Artillery, Lafayette Artillery, Washington Artillery, and German Artillery, numbering about two hundred men. When they reached Fort Moultrie, they found Captain Foster, with a few Federal soldiers still in command, but they retired to Fort Sumter at the approach of the State troops.

During the afternoon the Palmetto Guard and Cadet Riflemen took possession of the Arsenal, which, at the time, contained many thousand stand of arms and a large quantity of military stores. The Custom House had been seized, and the Palmetto flag raised over it. The judges of United States Courts had resigned, and all other Federal officers had ceased to act under the authority of the Federal Government, except the Post Master, and he continued to discharge his duties, more as a matter of policy than of loyalty to his country. The entire Federal authority was overthrown in the State of South Carolina, and the property of the General Government taken possession of, first on a pretext of protection from mob violence, but afterward maintained on the plea that it belonged to the State. The revenue laws of the United States were continued in force by the State Convention, and the officers were re-sworn to serve the State of South Carolina and hold

allegiance to it only. The revenues were collected as usual, and handed over to the State authorities and applied to State purposes. Vessels were cleared from her ports under the authority of the State of South Carolina, and boldly sailed to their destinations unmolested or interfered with by the Federal authority. This inactivity of the Government was construed by the Secessionists into a weakness and want of firmness to enforce its laws, and a fear of Southern power and vengeance.

After it was fully established that the Government would not withdraw Major Anderson and his command from Fort Sumter, the most active preparations were made by South Carolina, to prevent any reinforcements reaching him. Though the cry was continually echoing from the State, that she did not desire war, her utmost strength was put forth in warlike preparations. Repairs were immediately commenced upon the forts, and, as rapidly as possible, guns of the largest dimensions were put in position. A heavy battery was erected on Morris Island, that completely commanded the channel, and could prevent the entrance of vessels into the harbor. This battery was erected with a view to prevent the reinforcement of Fort Sumter, and within easy range of Major Anderson's guns, but having no orders to prevent the erection of batteries within his reach, he did not wish to take the responsibility of opening the war, but was compelled to quietly witness the sealing up of the harbor against any relief that the Government might, by pinching up its courage, have the bravery to send him.

CHAPTER VII.

SEIZURE OF THE FORTS IN GEORGIA.

After the resignation of John B. Floyd, as Secretary of War, and the offer of the position to General Scott, a feeling of more confidence in the Administration found its way into the public mind. It was firmly hoped and faintly believed that the Union could still be preserved, and the catastrophe of civil war avoided. This feeling was strengthened by the promptness of Mr. Holt, who was known to be a strong Union man. General Scott, General Cass, and Mr. Black, had urged the reinforcement of Fort Sumter, and it was on account of the President's hesitancy in the matter, that General Cass resigned his position as Secretary of State. Mr. Black maintained his position more out of personal friendship for Mr. Buchanan, than a desire to fill the duties of his office. Had those men whose patriotism illumined the gloom that surrounded the President, and partially held the workers of secession in check, been withdrawn, the result might have more disastrous to the country.

The Commissioners from the State of South Carolina had been in Washington for several days, but had not been received officially by the President. This delay on the part of the Federal Government perplexed them, and considerably annoyed their dignity and pricked their pride. It was presumed by the Palmetto Nation, that they would instantly have an official audience, and without delay a division of the Federal property would take place, and the articles of divorce and separation would be quickly ratified. But the President was constrained

to receive them only as gentlemen, and thus their most ardent official hopes were disappointed. Notwithstanding this cold indifference to their official visit, they made themselves perfectly at home. A house was taken for their convenience, and every evidence was manifest that they intended to remain as accredited ministers plenipotentiary from the independent Palmetto Nation. It was strongly urged by the people of the North, that the Commissioners should be arrested, and dealt with as traitors to their government, and by some decisive blow put a stop to the rapidly spreading disaffection. The Commissioners, however, boldly avowed their intentions, and impudently insisted on being received as ministers from a foreign nation. They tenaciously adhered to this idea, and avowed that their departure from the capitol of the United States would amount to a declaration of war. But failing to frighten the Administration into terms of recognition, they contented themselves in feasting and pampering their friends at the expense of their Government, until they took their departure with war upon their wings.

The holidays had passed, and 1861 had opened upon the country, with a sad prospect for the future. One part of the country was rapidly arming and fortifying itself, and defying the Government it had rebelled against. Another portion quietly viewed this aspect of affairs, and looked to the established authority to overthrow this belligerent position. The Administration was weak and vacillating, and Congress was squabbling over political technicalities and political prejudices. The Committee of Thirty-three, to whom the impending crisis had been committed, were busily engaged—as politicians always are—trying to settle political differences to the best advantage for their particular party, after which, their attention would have been directed to the good of the country. Unfortunately the political differences were not

settled, and the distracted state of the country was not reached.

On the 31st of December, an order was issued by the State of South Carolina to fortify Charleston harbor, and by the 2d of January, 1861, a battery of logs, earth and sand, was erected on the end of Sullivan Island, and one on Morris Island. It was expected that the Harriet Lane, a Government vessel, would attempt to enter the harbor, and orders were issued to fire into her and sink her if possible. There was constant drilling in the city, and several military companies marched on secret service. The Columbia Artillery arrived in the city at noon, on the 2d of January, 1861, and were immediately ordered to the harbor, and at the same time the forts were supplied with two thousand pounds of powder.

The Convention of the State elected Commissioners to visit each of the Slave States, and solicit them to assist in forming a Southern Confederacy. The report of a committee appointed for the purpose, suggested that, as a basis for the said Confederacy, the Constitution of the United States would be of infinite importance. They believed that the instrument called the Constitution of the United States was the work of great minds, and that it was constructed with the greatest skill and the most careful examination of details; that experience has proved it to be a good form of government for those sufficiently virtuous, intelligent and patriotic, to cause it to be fairly and honestly construed and impartially carried out; that it is the settled opinion of this State that there has never been an adverse plan of government for the Confederate States, on account of anything in its structure, but dissatisfaction, attributable to false glosses, dangerous misinterpretation, and perversion of sundry of its provisions, even to the extent in one particular of so covering up the real purposes of certain legislation (meant to protect domestic manufactures in one

section) as to estop the Supreme Court in its opinion from judicially perceiving the real design; that it presents a complete scheme of confederation, capable of being speedily put in operation.

The naturalization laws of the United States were so accommodated as to suit the condition of the State, and were then adopted by the Convention. The following ordinance, and oaths of allegiance and abjuration were also adopted :

Every person residing in South Carolina at the time of its secession from the United States, whether a born resident or a naturalized citizen, shall continue until death a citizen of South Carolina, unless a foreign residence be established, or notice of intention be given of expatriation; also, that all free whites born within the territory of the State, or those born outside the territory, whose father was then a citizen, shall be deemed citizens. Every person a citizen of any one of the States now confederated under the name of the United States of America, who, within twelve months after the date of the Ordinance of Secession, shall come and reside in the State with the intention of remaining; upon such person taking the oath of allegiance to this State, below provided. Also, every free white who shall be engaged in actual service in the military or naval force of the State, or shall take an oath of intention to continue in such service at least three months, unless sooner discharged honorably; and also the oath of allegiance below prescribed; in this case the oath to be administered by a commissioned officer of the service in which the applicant for citizenship is to be engaged, of superior rank to the applicant; thereupon the certificate of citizenship of the applicant, signed by the officer, shall be delivered to the applicant: also, every free white not a citizen of any of the States above mentioned, who at the date of secession was residing in the State, or who within a year from that date has come to reside in the State with the intention of remaining, upon such person appearing before the Court of Common Pleas, for any of the districts of the State, and establishing by his or her oath the residence or intention here required, and taking the oaths of allegiance and abjuration prescribed below; also, every person not a citizen

of any of the States above mentioned. [It means any person of the United States at the date aforesaid, who may come to reside in the State with the intention of remaining, may be naturalized according to the naturalization laws of the State, until altered or repealed.]

The oath of allegiance is: "I do swear or affirm, that I will be faithful and true allegiance bear to the State of South Carolina so long as I may continue a citizen thereof."

The oath of abjuration is: "I solemnly swear or affirm, that I do renounce and for ever abjure all allegiance and fidelity to every prince, potentate, State, or sovereignty whatsoever, except the State of South Carolina."

About this time a large number of troops were offered to South Carolina from Georgia and other Southern States. But it was believed that the ostensible purpose of assembling the troops was not for the protection of the State, but for the purpose of seizing the Federal Capitol. This idea found its way to the President, and an order was issued to Captain Charles Stone to organize the militia of the District of Columbia.

About this time a commissioner had been dispatched by the Legislature of the State of Mississippi to the State of Delaware, to use his influence with the Legislature of the latter State, to bring about its secession. Though the State was small in dimensions, it had within it a loyal and patriotic people, who firmly stood by the Union. Mr. Dickenson laid before the Delaware Legislature the resolution passed by that of Mississippi, and entertained the Delaware legislators with the most urgent appeals to join in the secession movement. He was listened to with the most dignified respect, and his propositions duly considered. This was more a matter of courtesy than an inclination to consider the subject with any serious intentions.

On the 3d of January the following resolution was adopted in the Delaware Legislature, having passed the House unanimously, and by a majority in the Senate:—

Resolved, That, having extended to the Hon. H. Dickenson, Commissioner from Mississippi, the courtesy due him as a representative of a sovereign State of the Confederacy, as well as to the State he represents, we deem it proper and due to ourselves and the people of Delaware, to express our unqualified disapproval of the remedy for the existing difficulties suggested by the resolutions of the Legislature of Mississippi.

The action of Delaware in thus summarily dismissing a subject so dangerous and disloyal, was hailed with delight. It revived the drooping cause of the Union, and gave hope of at least some check to the rapidly spreading evil.

The movements of the State of Georgia were closely watched, for it was believed by many that the Union sentiment of her people would prevail over the secession efforts of Toombs and Cobb. But this hope was partially dispelled; for, on the 3d of January, Governor Brown dispatched a portion of the State troops to seize Forts Pulaski and Jackson, near Savannah. Like almost every important point in the South, these forts had been previously prepared for the secessionists by the Secretary of War. Governor Brown excuses this haste, (the State not having seceded,) on the ground that he feared they would fall into the hands of the mob, and he was anxious to protect the Federal property.

At eight o'clock in the morning, the steamer Sampson left Savannah with detachments for Fort Pulaski. Col. Henry R. Jackson, Aid to the Governor, accompanied by Major H. M. Davenport, had preceded the companies, and had demanded of Mr. Thomas Hennassy, keeper of the fort, the keys, which he, having no power to resist, promptly delivered to the authorized agent of the Governor of Georgia.

When the boat reached the landing on Cockspur Island, the troops were debarked, and marched to the fort, which was taken possession of in pursuance of orders of the Governor of the State, by Col. A. R. Lawton, commanding officer, Capt.

F. S. Bartow, of the Oglethorpe Light Infantry, acting as second in command.

On the passage down, the Sampson passed the revenue cutter J. C. Dobbin, with United States colors, Union down, and the Palmetto flag flying at her peak.

Shortly after the arrival of the steamer at Cockspur, a party of gentlemen presented themselves at the fort, and made a tender to Col. Lawton of the cutter, which they had captured, and which was then aground. Col. Lawton not recognizing the unlawful capture of the Dobbin, authorized Capt. Schri ven, of the Savannah Volunteer Guard, to take possession of her in the name of the State of Georgia, with instructions to turn her over to the Governor, which he did.

Mr. Boston, the Collector of the port of Savannah, protested against the seizure of the revenue cutter, as she had, some fifteen days before, been ordered to Baltimore. Governor Brown sent the following note in reply to Mr. Boston:—

PULASKI HOUSE, Jan. 3, 1861.

JOHN BOSTON, *Collector, &c.*

SIR—Your note in reply to my communication of this evening is received, and I have ordered the delivery of the J. C. Dobbin to her captain, with permission to proceed to sea, as you have requested.

Very respectfully, &c.,

JOSEPH E. BROWN.

SAVANNAH AND ITS DEFENSES.

Savannah is the seat of justice, and the largest city in the State of Georgia, and contains 20,000 inhabitants. It is situated on the south-east bank of the Savannah river, on a high bluff, forty feet above low-water mark. It is twelve miles distant, in a direct or air line, from the ocean, and eighteen miles, following the course of the river. The city is regularly laid out in the form of a parallelogram, with streets (many of them wide) crossing each other at right angles.

There are ten public squares in the city, containing two acres each, at equal distances from each other. These squares and many of the streets are bordered with trees, and particularly of the genus known as the "Pride of India," which give them a beautiful appearance. The monument erected to General Greene, and especially the one to Count General Pulaski, who fell in the attack against the British at Savannah, are beautiful and tasteful structures. Many of the houses are of brick, and a considerable number of them, including the principal public buildings, are elegant. The city is lighted with gas, and well supplied with water from the river, raised by two powerful steam engines into a reservoir one hundred and twenty feet above the surface of the river, and distributed through the city in iron pipes. On the east and west of the city are marshes, and a pine barren extends two miles to the south. The city affords good facilities for vessels in distress, having a dry dock capable of taking vessels 235 feet in length, by 60 feet over all, and everything necessary for repairing vessels. There are also ways for drawing up vessels of three hundred tons. There are twenty feet of water on Tybee bar at high water, with a fall of six feet.

The city was founded in 1733, by General James Oglethorpe and others. It was taken by the British in 1778, but they abandoned it in 1782. On the 10th of January, 1820, four hundred and sixty-three buildings were destroyed by fire, four millions worth of property destroyed; but it has been rebuilt with additional beauty.

FORT PULASKI.

The city is guarded on its sea approaches by Fort Pulaski, built on Cockspur Island, fourteen miles from Savannah, at the mouth of the Savannah river. The site of the fortification was selected by Major Babcock, of the United States Engineer

Corps, about twenty-six years ago, but it was not till 1831 that the work of erecting the present massive masonry fortification was commenced in earnest. In that year Captain Mansfield, now Colonel Mansfield, of the Inspector General's Department, took charge of its construction. The fort was finished a few years ago, at a cost of \$963,000. The fort is of a pentagonal form, covering several acres; its walls are forty feet high, and present two faces on the sea approach, with ranges of fire radiating at opposite angles. The fort is embrasured on the front and channel side for one row of guns, under bomb-proof casemates, with an additional tier of guns open, or *en barbette*. The salient points and flanking approaches in the rear of the work have no embrasures for heavy cannon, but are thoroughly covered by enfilading musket loopholes, which renders a land or escalading attack extra hazardous to an enemy. The full armament of the fort consists on the lower tier of sixty-five thirty-two-pounder iron pieces, and the upper tier with fifty-three twenty-four-pounders, four eighteen-pounder flanking howitzers, one thirteen-inch mortar, twelve eight-inch columbiads, and seven ten-inch mortars—in all, one hundred and fifty guns. Not more than one-half the number of guns required for its full armament were in the fort, and these were dismantled. The columbiads, to which reference has been made, are very destructive weapons of long range, and adapted to use spherical shot or shells. Many of those in Fort Pulaski can be mounted to have a horizontal fire of one hundred and eighty degrees, and a vertical fire of five degrees depression to thirty-six degrees elevation. The interior of the fort is well supplied with massive furnaces for heating shot, officers' quarters, soldiers' barracks, magazines, and a tolerable supply of shot and powder.

A ditch surrounds the work, and which, when dry, can be

used by sharp shooters, or should it be necessary at the approach of an enemy, easily flooded. Beyond this ditch is a glacis, or inclined bank, which is enfiladed by the guns from the lower or casemate row of the fortification. The fort is not on a full war footing; to complete it, twenty-six new barbette gun platforms are required, to suit the prescribed armament; and the ditches should be cleared of the mud accumulated throughout their whole extent, the bottoms of the ditches repaired, and the banks of the feeding canal riveted. The full war garrison of the work is eight hundred men, but one-half that number could hold it successfully. Vessels of any considerable size, in beating up the channel to Savannah, are obliged to approach within seventy yards of the fort, and at this point many guns of large calibre can be made to concentrate their fire. The fortification is pronounced by expert army engineers, one of the strongest and most perfect of its kind on this continent. It covers more area than Fort Sumter, but has one tier of guns less than that work.

Fort Pulaski is now garrisoned by upwards of two hundred Georgia State troops, who are working to put the place in a complete state of defense. The garrison is now under the command of Colonel Alexander R. Lawton, a graduate of West Point, and subsequently an officer of the First Regiment of United States Artillery.

FORT JACKSON.

This is a small work, built on a low marsh, four miles from Savannah, on a site near the bend of the river, and commanding important points in the channel. It is built of heavy brick masonry. Its armament consists of ten twenty-four-pounder iron guns, three field pieces, five eight-inch howitzers, one ten-inch mortar and one eight-inch mortar. Its war garrison consists of seventy men. It cost the government \$80,000.

Early Friday morning, January 4th, the State troops of Alabama took possession of the Arsenal at Mobile. It contained six stand of arms, fifteen hundred barrels of powder three hundred thousand rounds of musket cartridges, and other munitions of war. During the night, Forts Morgan and Gaines, in Mobile harbor, had been taken possession of. This course was usually preparatory to the secession of a State.

FORT MORGAN AND MOUNT VERNON ARSENAL.

At the time Louisiana was purchased from France, in 1803, Mobile was claimed and held as a Spanish possession. The French claimed territory to the Perdido river, flowing into the Gulf of Mexico between Mobile Bay and Pensacola. When we came into possession of Louisiana, we also claimed to the same boundary, while the Spanish Government claimed to a line considerably west of Mobile. The war of 1812 coming, the Spaniards continued in possession until 1813, when the Fort Conde, the principal work in Mobile, was surrendered to a force under General Wilkinson, and our claim made good to the Perdido. The Americans, on taking possession, not only strengthened Fort Conde, but also manned the imperfect works at Mobile Point, which measurably commanded the entrance to the harbor. These were attacked, in the autumn of 1814, by some British vessels of war—one of which, if our memory serves us, was the *Hermes*. On this locality has since been constructed Fort Morgan—one of the strongest defensive works on the Gulf of Mexico. With this fort and other works at the entrance of the bay, twenty-two miles from the city, in the possession of a reasonable force, no fleet, however formidable, can pass them. Fort Morgan alone commands the chief entrance to the bay. Vessels of large draft cannot pass over Dog Island bar, some miles below the city.

The Arsenal, referred to as having been taken possession of

by Alabama militia, is known as the Mount Vernon Arsenal, and is situated thirty miles in the interior, north of Mobile. It stands on a high hill, which rises some 400 or 500 feet above the surrounding country. From the base of this hill to the city, and, in fact, to the Gulf of Mexico, is almost a dead level. The soil is sandy, and covered with an almost unbroken pitch pine forest, interspersed with alluvial creeks, small farms, and with glades and swamps, bearing magnolia trees, live oaks and tangled thickets of undergrowth. The present Mobile and Tennessee Railroad passes near Mount Vernon. The view from the Arsenal is magnificent, overlooking, towards the Gulf, an apparently interminable carpet of green, which is lost in dimness as it disappears at its junction with the distant horizon. The site was well chosen as a safe depository of arms and other munitions of war for the defense of New Orleans, Mobile, Pensacola, and the contiguous Gulf coast, and it is probably the strongest and best built arsenal to be found in the United States. It contains a vast store of army equipments of all kinds, including a large quantity of muskets, artillery, and military apparatus of all kinds, with an ample supply of balls and powder. From the elevated position of the arsenal, it could be defended against almost any amount of force that might be brought against it.

FORT MORGAN.

The principal fortification, guarding the mouth of Mobile Bay, is Fort Morgan. It is located on Mobile Point, on the site of old Fort Boyer, of 1814 memory—a long, low, sandy peninsula, between the Gulf of Mexico, on the south, and Bonsecours Bay and Navy Cove, on the north. The Point is the eastern limit of the entrance to Mobile Bay. As the site of Fort Morgan is historic, we subjoin the following brief sketch of its importance in the war of 1812:—

On September 14th, 1814, a British fleet of four vessels, carrying ninety-two guns, attacked Fort Boyer, a small redoubt. This redoubt was garrisoned by only one hundred and twenty Americans—officers included—under the command of Major Lawrence, and its armament was but twenty small pieces of cannon, some of which were almost entirely useless, and most of them poorly mounted, in batteries hastily thrown up, and leaving the guns uncovered from the knee upward, while the enemy's land force, acting in concert with the ships, consisted of twenty artillerists, with a battery of two guns, and seven hundred and thirty marines, Indians, and negroes. His ships carried five hundred and ninety men in all. This immense disparity of numbers and strength did not allow to the British military and naval commanders the slightest apprehension that four British ships, carrying ninety-two guns, and a land force somewhat exceeding seven hundred combatants, could fail in reducing a small work mounting only twenty short caronades, and defended by a little more than one hundred men, unprovided alike with furnaces for heating shot, or casemates to cover themselves from rockets and shells. Nevertheless, the enemy was completely repulsed; the British commodore's ship was entirely destroyed. The enemy's loss, in killed and wounded, was two hundred and thirty-two men, while the American loss was only eight or nine.

The present fortification is of a star form, built of Northern granite, and is, we believe, embrasured for one tier of guns, in casemated bomb-proof roofs, and another tier of guns open air, or *en barbette*. On the exterior of the fort is a ditch and glacis extending entirely around it. There are other advanced works on the counter approaches to the fort. It is not wholly accessible by land, and it therefore affords little advantage ground to an enemy.

ITS ARMAMENT.

	GUNS.
Iron forty-two-pounders.....	14
Iron twenty-four-pounders.....	52
Eighteen-pounders.....	3
Twelve-pounders.....	4
Brass field pieces for flanking defenses.....	6
Brass flanking howitzers.....	26
Eight-inch howitzers, heavy.....	10
Thirteen-inch mortars.....	2
Ten-inch mortars, heavy.....	4
Ten-inch mortars, light.....	2
Eight-inch mortars, light.....	2
Sixteen-inch stone mortars.....	2
Coehorn mortars.....	5
<hr/>	
Total armament.....	132

We believe all or nearly all the guns required for the armament of the work are within its walls, but, with the exception of a few guns *en barbette*, were dismounted. The Alabama State troops, however, were busy in mounting the guns, and by this time have forty or fifty of them commanding the entrance to Mobile Bay. There are about five thousand shot and shells in the fort, and additions have since been made. It will require the sum of \$50,000 for making changes for the new and heavy armament on the exterior batteries, and for extensive repairs required for the preservation of the work.

The fort has ample quarters for officers, soldiers' barracks, storehouses and magazines, and furnaces for heating hot shot. The entire work cost the Federal Government one and a quarter millions of dollars.

FORT GAINES.

This work is the other defence to Mobile Bay. It is situated on Dauphin's Island Point, three miles and one-fourth from, and nearly opposite Fort Morgan. This fort was under construction, and when finished would mount eighty-nine guns. The Chief Engineer of the Corps of Engineers, in his report to the Secretary of War in 1860, says of the work:—"Operations were resumed in January, 1860. The west bastion has been raised five minutes and six seconds, the magazine arch turned, four flank howitzer embrasures built, and the main arch commenced. The main arches of the north, south, and north-east bastions have been turned, and the planks and piers of these bastions built up ready for the arches of the flanking guns. The side walls of the north and west posterns have been built, the arch of the west postern turned, and four iron gates for posterns made and hung. The gorge curtain has been raised three minutes six seconds; the brick facing of the south-west curtain has been raised four minutes three seconds, and backed with concrete for one foot in height; and the brick facing of the north half of north curtain has been raised three minutes six seconds. The parade has been thoroughly graded, the earth being embanked in the ramparts, and the wharf has been repaired so as to allow of the receipt of materials. With the funds at present available, it is expected that the scarp wall will be completed and embanked to a sufficient height to allow of the channel-bearing guns being mounted on temporary platforms in case of necessity. To complete the work, with the exception to further accommodate the garrison, the officer in charge estimates that the sum of \$65,000 will be required."

After the dismissal of the Secession Commissioners from the State of Delaware, the power of the secessionists was doubled upon the State of Maryland. At a glance they saw the geographical benefit this State would be to them. Of Virginia

they were certain, and it was only the lukewarmness of Maryland that still held Virginia in the Union. If Maryland were obtained, the Federal Capitol would be cut off from the North, and it would fall an easy prey to the South. With the Federal Capitol in their possession, the damage to the cause of the Union would have been irreparable, and perhaps fatal. There was, under all, a secret plan to capture Washington, as soon as Maryland should be secured. Governor Hicks was beset by the most fervent secessionists of the State, to convene the State Legislature in extra session. But the patriot was too wise and sagacious to be moved from his loyalty by any sophistry or argument of his self-constituted advisers. He could not see the necessity of convening the Legislature, nor could they convince him upon that point. So hard did they press him, and so frequently misrepresent him to the people of his State, that he was constrained to defend himself by issuing an address, January 6th, to the citizens. He says:

“I firmly believe that a division of this Government would inevitably produce civil war. The secession leaders in South Carolina, and the fanatical demagogues of the North, have alike proclaimed that such would be the result, and no man of sense, in my opinion, can question it. What could the Legislature do in this crisis, if convened, to remove the present troubles which beset the Union? We are told by the leading spirits of the South Carolina Convention, that neither the election of Mr. Lincoln, nor the non-execution of the Fugitive Slave Law, nor both combined, constitute their grievances. They declare that the real cause of their discontent dates as far back as 1833. Maryland, and every other State in the Union, with a united voice, then declared the cause insufficient to justify the course of South Carolina. Can it be that this people, who then unanimously supported the cause of Gen. Jackson, will now yield their opinions at the bidding of modern secessionists.

* * * * *

“The people of Maryland, if left to themselves, would decide, with scarcely an exception, that there is nothing in

the present causes of complaint to justify immediate secession ; and yet, against our judgments and solemn convictions of duty, we are to be precipitated into this revolution, because South Carolina thinks differently. Are we not equals? Or shall her opinions control our actions? After we have solemnly declared for ourselves, as every man must do, are we to be forced to yield our opinions to those of another State, and thus, in effect, obey her mandates? She refuses to wait for our counsels. Are we bound to obey her commands?

“The men who have embarked in this scheme to convene the Legislature will spare no pains to carry their point. The whole plan of operations in the event of the assembling of the Legislature is, as I have been informed, already marked out, the list of ambassadors who are to visit the other States is agreed on, and the resolutions which they hope will be passed by the Legislature, fully committing this State to secession, are said to be already prepared.

“In the course of nature, I cannot have long to live, and I fervently trust to be allowed to end my days a citizen of this glorious Union. But, should I be compelled to witness the downfall of that Government inherited from our fathers, established, as it were, by the special favor of God, I will at least have the consolation, at my dying hour, that I neither by word or deed assisted in hastening its disruption.

(Signed,)

“THOMAS H. HICKS.”

The 'Governor's patriotism was afterwards sustained by the people, who declared, by a majority of thousands, that they were for the Union.

When it was fully ascertained that the Star of the West had sailed for Charleston, with reinforcements and supplies for Fort Sumter, Mr. Thompson, Secretary of the Interior, became very indignant, and immediately resigned his position. His promptness in withdrawing from the Cabinet did not, for a moment, incommode the Government, or cause one sigh of regret, except to his secession friends, who saw that their most faithful servants and spies were fast removing from important

places. This course was depriving them of much valuable information of the movements of the Government, that could not be gathered from any other sources. By these resignations the political atmosphere of the Cabinet was becoming pure, and it was ardently hoped that something firm and decisive would be done to check the accumulating disaffection.

CHAPTER VIII.

REINFORCEMENTS SENT TO FORT SUMTER.

The President yielded to the influence of the loyal members of his Cabinet, and secretly dispatched the *Star of the West* to Charleston, with troops and supplies for Major Anderson. It was a mournful and melancholy sight, to view the humiliating and cowardly condition of the Federal Government. Powerful enough to have crushed, at one blow, the infection that was just budding into rebellion, it was compelled to crouch to its enemies and entreat their forbearance. Its troops were quartered in its own fort and in its own dominions, and in order to supply them an unarmed vessel must endeavor to sneak past batteries erected by the Government's own hostile subjects. The world, perhaps, never before witnessed an act so undignified by a nation so powerful, and in all probability never will again.

About half-past ten o'clock, on the morning of January the 9th, the steamer *General Clinch*, belonging to the Palmetto Nation, discovered the *Star of the West*, standing for Charleston harbor. The State battery on Morris Island was immediately signaled, and in a short time the State troops were prepared to give the ship a warm reception. The authorities had been advised from Washington of the sailing of the vessel, its destination and its object. The battery prepared to warn the vessel, but expected that the moment their guns opened upon it, Fort Sumter would return the compliment. The vessel rounded the point, took the ship channel inside the bar, and steamed forward until within three-quarters of a mile of Morris Island.

The first shot fired passed across the bow of the vessel and struck the water about a ship's length ahead. The American ensign at the fore peak was then unfurled, and the vessel continued on amid the fire of the battery; but receiving no answer by signal from Fort Sumter in response to the hoisting of the American flag, and a couple of vessels coming down the harbor at the same time, apparently with a hostile intention, her head was turned for sea once more.

During all this trying time, with the guns of the battery continually pouring out their deadly missiles, the most admirable order was preserved on board. The soldiers were sent below, and no one allowed to remain on deck except the officers and crew. The captain and first officers were at the pilot-house, while the second mate was ready on the forward deck to get the relieving tackle to work in the event of any of the balls striking the wheel and preventing control over the vessel's movements. That there was good need of this precaution, is shown by the close proximity of a ball that passed over the wheel-house. The shots fired at the vessel during the first part of the attack struck short of her, but, glancing up from the water, ricocheted over the vessel, and were plainly visible during their flight in this second direction.

After she had again put to sea, Major Anderson sent Lieut. Hall with a flag of truce to Governor Pickens, and laid before him the following note :

TO HIS EXCELLENCY, THE GOVERNOR OF SOUTH CAROLINA :—

SIR—Two of your batteries fired this morning on an unarmed vessel bearing the flag of my Government. As I have not been notified that war has been declared by South Carolina against the United States, I cannot but think this a hostile act, committed without your sanction or authority. Under that hope I refrain from opening fire on your batteries. I have the honor, therefore, respectfully to ask whether the above mentioned act—one which I believe without parallel in

the history of our country or any other civilized government—was committed in obedience to your instructions, and notify you, if it is not disclaimed, that I regard it as an act of war, and I shall not, after reasonable time for the return of my messenger, permit any vessel to pass within the range of the guns of my fort.

In order to save, as far as it is in my power, the shedding of blood, I beg you will take due notification of my decision for the good of all concerned. Hoping, however, your answer may justify a further continuance of forbearance on my part, I remain, respectfully,

ROBERT ANDERSON.

The Governor, in his reply, reviews the position of South Carolina toward the United States, and then says:

“That any attempt to send United States troops into Charleston harbor to reinforce the forts would be regarded as an act of hostility, and in conclusion adds that any attempt to reinforce the troops at Fort Sumter, or to retake and resume possession of the forts within the waters of South Carolina, which Major Anderson abandoned after spiking the cannon and doing other damages, cannot be regarded by the authorities of the State as indicative of any other purpose than the coercion of the State by the armed force of the government.

“Special agents, therefore, have been off the bar to warn approaching vessels, armed and unarmed, having troops to reinforce Fort Sumter aboard, not to enter the harbor. Special orders have been given the commanders at the forts not to fire on such vessels until a shot across their bows should warn them of the prohibition of the State. Under these circumstances the *Star of the West*, it is understood, this morning attempted to enter the harbor with troops, after having been notified she could not enter, and consequently she was fired into. The act is perfectly justified by me.

“In regard to your threat about vessels in the harbor, it is only necessary for me to say you must be the judge of your responsibility. Your position in the harbor has been tolerated by the authorities of the State, and while the act of which you complain is in perfect consistency with the rights and duties of the State, it is not perceived how far the conduct

you propose to adopt can find a parallel in the history of any country, or be reconciled with any other purpose than that of your Government imposing on the State the condition of a conquered province.

F. W. PICKENS."

After Major Anderson received the reply of Governor Pickens, he concluded to submit the matter to the Federal Government. He accordingly addressed a second note to the Governor, informing him of his decision, and requesting that Lieutenant Talbot be permitted to proceed to Washington with dispatches, and return with further orders upon the subject. To this request the Governor of the independent Palmetto Nation made no objections. Late in the evening Lieutenant Talbot proceeded on his journey to Washington.

For a few hours there was great excitement in the City of Charleston, but when the *Star of the West* turned about and put to sea, it partially subsided into rejoicing at the result. Every taunt and indignity the Southern press could conceive and invent was heaped upon the Government. They had carried out their threat, and the first missile of war fired upon the Federal flag was sent by the State of South Carolina. It was the beginning of war, a declaration of hostilities more substantial than a mere paper missile.

Notwithstanding this outrage upon our national honor—an insult that any other nation would have resented by the utter annihilation of the insulting party, was quietly acquiesced in by the President. No further attempt was made at that time to reinforce Fort Sumter; but Major Anderson and his little band were allowed to remain prisoners in Charleston harbor.

The investment of Fort Sumter was pushed rapidly forward. Hundreds of negro slaves were employed on the works, and mechanics were engaged in building a formidable floating battery. It was composed of hemlock logs, squared and bolted together. The end which was to carry the battery,

presented an angle of about thirty degrees from near the centre upward, and formed a sort of bomb-proof roof. It descended from near the centre to the water, at an angle of about forty-five degrees, so that shot striking it would glance off. The end was covered with railroad iron, and was considered perfectly impregnable. Its position was to be near Fort Sumter, and its armament being heavy, it was intended to breach the walls. A few weeks before the bombardment, it was anchored within easy range of Fort Sumter.

On the 5th of March, Peter G. Toutant Beauregard, formerly a Major of the United States Engineers, assumed command of the military works at Charleston, by order of Jefferson Davis, President of the Southern Confederacy. From this time there was unusual activity, and by the 11th of April, seventeen formidable batteries, manned by between seven and eight thousand troops, were grinning upon Fort Sumter.

CHAPTER IX.

SEIZURE OF THE FORTS IN NORTH CAROLINA.

It was known that a strong Union feeling existed in North Carolina, and a fervent hope was entertained that her people would resist the secession movement, and stand by the Federal Government. If the people of the State had been left free in the expression of their sentiments, there is but little doubt the State would have remained loyal. But her rulers were pledged to follow South Carolina, and determined to carry the State in that direction at all hazards.

On the night of January 8th, the Smithville Guard, acting under the orders of Governor Ellis, took possession of Fort Macon, at Beaufort, and Fort Caswell, at Smithfield.

FORT MACON.

Fort Macon protects Beaufort, N. C., and is situated on a bluff of Bogue's bank, one and three-fourths mile from the city. It commands the entrance to Beaufort harbor, having full sweep of fire on the main channel. The opposite entrance to the harbor is Shackleford bank, one and a half mile across. The fortification is of hexagonal form, has two tiers of guns, one in casemated bombproofs, and the other *en barbette*. Its armament consists of twenty thirty-two pounders, thirty-two twenty-four-pounders, two eighteen-pounders, two twelve-pounders, three field pieces for flanking defense, twelve flank howitzers, eight eight-inch howitzers, (heavy,) eight eight-inch howitzers, (light,) one thirteen-inch mortar, three ten-inch mortars, two Coehorn mortars. Total, eighty-seven guns.

The war garrison of the fort is three hundred men. This fort, however, is sadly in need of repairs; the masonry requires pointing in many places; nearly all the iron work, such as doors and window fastenings, are rusted away. One of the wooden bridges across the ditch is decayed, as also the shingled entire slope of the covert way. The shot furnace is useless, the store rooms need renovation, and the roadway requires to have its embankment repaired, and a new bridge to be built across the canal. The wharf, having its piers undermined by the sea current and its wooden superstructure much decayed, requires to be rebuilt. The fortification cost the Federal Government half a million dollars.

FORT CASWELL.

Fort Caswell is a first class fortification, of a hexagonal form, built of massive Northern granite masonry, having two tiers of guns under bomb-proof casemates, and one tier of guns *en barbette*. It is situated at the entrance of Cape Fear river, two miles from Smithville. Its armament consists of twelve thirty-two-pounders, twenty-two twenty-four-pounders, four eighteen-pounders, four twelve-pounders, three field pieces for flanking defenses, six flank howitzers, six eight-inch howitzers, (heavy,) two ten-inch mortars, and two Coehorn mortars—in all eighty-seven guns. The work is surrounded by ditches and advanced works, and is in every particular a first class work. It cost the Federal Government \$571,000. Its war garrison consists of four hundred men. The work is generally in very good condition. A change is required in its armament, so that more guns may be mounted upon the gorge of the main work of the covered way, as these portions now bear directly upon the channel, which has shifted from the east to the west shore. New platforms for these guns will require to be constructed. The battery Johnson, mounting ten guns,

situated at Smithville, with a magazine, is auxiliary to Fort Caswell.

The work of secession spread with such rapidity, that the people of the North stood appalled at the devastation it was making. No restraint, or effort to stay it, was put forth by the Government, and the leaders of the movement believed that the Federal Government was afraid of its own weakness. In this conjecture they perhaps were right, but they had not counted upon the strength of the incoming Administration, and the strength and ability of the people of the North to sustain that Administration. Apparently happy, and rejoicing at the dreadful calamity they were preparing for themselves and their children, they rushed madly on, dragging one State after another into the vortex.

The State Convention of Mississippi assembled on the 7th of January, and on the 9th passed an Ordinance of Secession, dissolving all ties with the Federal Government. The reasons assigned for separation were about the same as those of South Carolina, except a recommendation to other Southern States to form a Southern Confederacy. Following the example of other States, all the Federal property within her borders was seized.

Following quickly in the wake of Mississippi, Alabama passed an act of separation on the 11th, and also recommended the organization of a Southern Confederacy. The Federal property in this State had been previously seized, by order of the Governor.

On the 11th day of January, one of the most heartless acts of cruelty ever witnessed in a civilized community, was perpetrated at New Orleans, in the State of Louisiana. Near New Orleans is situated the United States Marine Hospital. At this time it contained two hundred and sixteen sick and feeble patients, who were ordered to be removed. This order

was executed, though the weather was very inclement, and the patients were helpless. Some of them received shelter and protection from citizens whose hearts were not stone, while others, more unfortunate and perhaps more helpless, were compelled to seek such shelter as the streets and alleys of the city afforded. After the removal of the sick, the State troops took possession of the property.

General orders were issued by Governor Moore to seize all the Federal property within the State. On the afternoon of the 10th, the steamer *National*, chartered for the purpose, lay at the foot of Canal street, New Orleans, and took on board the following companies: Crescent City Rifles, Captain Gladden, Lieutenant Commanding William A. Metcalf, forty-nine men; Washington Artillery, Lieutenant Commanding James, seventy-two men; Second Company Chasseurs-a-Pied, Captain S. Meilleur, forty men; Orleans Cadets, Captain Charles D. Dreux, thirty-nine men; Louisiana Guard, Captain S. M. Todd, Lieutenant Commanding Girardey, forty-five men; Sarsfield Guard, Captain O'Hara, sixteen men; total, two hundred and sixty-one men. Their destination was Baton Rouge, to seize the arsenal. This place was under the command of Major Haskins, with two companies of United States troops.

The expedition reached its destination during the night, and in the morning demanded a surrender. This the Major absolutely refused, and was ready to defend the place. A parley, however, was held, and by 12 o'clock the gallant Major was surrounded by six hundred State troops. Finding it impossible to hold the place, he surrendered at noon, and the arsenal, with its arms and munitions, were taken in charge by the State troops.

During the afternoon of the 11th, the steamer *Yankee* took on board the following State troops, under the command of

General Palfrey: two companies of the Orleans Artillery Battalion, under Captains Gomez and Hebrard, total fifty-seven men; First Company of the Chasseurs-a-Pied, Captain St. Paul, forty-four men, (this company left a reserve of twenty-seven men, to march when called upon;) Chasseurs d'Orleans of 1814-15, fifteen men; the German Yagers, twenty-three men; the Lafayette Guard, a German company, twenty-seven men.

This expedition, as will be seen by the following order, was for the purpose of seizing the forts near the Gulf.

INSTRUCTIONS TO MAJOR PAUL E. THEARD.

You will proceed with your detachment on board of the steamboat *Yankee*, and go down to Forts St. Philip and Jackson, where you will demand of the persons in charge of the forts to surrender them; and you will take possession of the same in the name of the State of Louisiana. Haul down the United States flag, if floating there, and hoist the Pelican flag from Fort Jackson. Place Captain St. Paul, with the first company of Chasseurs-a-Pied, in possession of Fort St. Philip, and take possession of Fort Jackson with the balance of the detachment. You will hold the forts, and defend them against any and all attacks, to the last. Strict discipline and order must be exacted by you.

By order of his Excellency, Thomas O. Moore, Governor of the State of Louisiana.

M. GRIVOT, Adjutant General.

Later in the afternoon a third expedition left the city, for the purpose of capturing Fort Pike, at the Rigolets, or outlet of Lake Pontchartrain. All the forts, and the arsenal, were captured without firing a gun; a triumph that gave the secession cause a formidable impetus.

The Florida Convention passed an Ordinance of Secession on the 12th of January. On the same day Major Chase, of Alabama, who had command of the Alabama State troops at

Pensacola, numbering about four hundred men, made a demand on Commodore Armstrong, the Federal commander, for the unconditional surrender of the Navy Yard. The Commodore had under his command about sixty men, three-fourths of whom, he believed, were rabid secessionists. Believing himself unable to defend the place with his small force, he surrendered to Major Chase. Lieutenant Sanders, a bearer of dispatches to Commodore Armstrong from the Federal Government, had arrived at Pensacola. The dispatches were demanded of him by the Major, but the Lieutenant refused to give them up. He was then informed they would be taken by force, to which he replied it would be a declaration of war. He was then conducted to the Navy Yard, and perceiving that Commodore Armstrong had already surrendered, he delivered up his dispatches. The officers and men who desired to return to the North, were released on parole.

At the time of the surrender of the Navy Yard, Lieutenant Slemmer had command of Fort McRae, Fort Pickens and Fort Barrancas. The command of Lieutenant Slemmer was small, only amounting to about eighty men. Perceiving the unpleasant state of affairs, and fearing a surprise by vastly superior numbers, the gallant Lieutenant withdrew to Fort Pickens. His position there was impregnable, and the fort was so situated that it could be easily reinforced.

This act was hailed with joy in the North, and was like a pleasant gleam of sunshine piercing the national gloom. It gave undeniable proof that there were patriotic soldiers who only waited for a word of encouragement from their superior officers, to strike a heavy blow for the honor and preservation of their country and their homes.

PENSACOLA AND ITS FORTIFICATIONS.

PENSACOLA BAY.

Pensacola Bay has rare properties as a harbor. It is now accessible to frigates. The bar is near the coast, and the channel across it short and easily passed. The harbor is perfectly land-locked, and the roadstead very capacious. There are excellent positions within for repairing, building and launching vessels, and for docks and dockyards in healthy situations. The supply of good water is abundant. These properties, in connection with the position of the harbor, as regards the coast, have induced the Government to select it as a naval station, and a place of rendezvous and repair. The upper arms of Pensacola Bay receive the Yellow Water or Pea river, Middle river and Escambia river, eleven miles from the Gulf.

SANTA ROSA ISLAND.

Santa Rosa Island is situated east by north-west by south fourteen leagues, and completely shuts out Pensacola from the sea. It is so low that the sea in a gale washes its top; it is not more than one-fourth of a mile wide. The west point of this island is at the mouth of Pensacola Bay. The latter is not over one and a quarter miles wide.

FORT PICKENS.

The principal means of defense to the mouth of Pensacola Bay and the naval station is Fort Pickens. This fort is a first-class bastioned fort, built of New York granite, and situated on low ground on the east point of Santa Rosa Island. Its walls are forty-five feet in height, by twelve feet in thickness; it is embrasured for two tiers of guns, which are placed under bomb-proof casemates, besides having one tier of guns *en barbette*. The guns from this work radiate to every point

of the horizon, with flank and enfilading fire at every angle of approach. The work was commenced in 1828, and finished in 1853. It cost the Federal Government nearly one million of dollars. When on a war footing, its garrison consists of twelve hundred and sixty soldiers. Its armament, only a portion of which is within its walls, consists of:—

	GUNS.
Forty-two-pounder iron guns.....	63
Thirty-two-pounder iron guns... ..	17
Twenty-four-pounder iron guns.....	49
Eighteen-pounder iron guns.....	5
Twelve-pounder iron guns.....	13
Brass field pieces.....	6
Brass flank howitzers.....	26
Heavy eight-inch howitzers.....	13
Thirteen-inch mortar.....	1
Heavy ten-inch mortars.....	4
Light eight-inch mortars.....	4
Sixteen-inch stone mortars.....	4
Coehorn mortars	5
<hr/>	
Total armament.....	210

The fire from this work completely covers the Navy Yard. The bar on the exterior of the bay is three miles distant, and beyond that there are no facilities for a hostile fleet to lie in safety.

FORT M'RAE.

This fortification is situated on Foster's Bank, and guards the west side of the mouth of Pensacola Bay. It is a bastioned fort, built of brick masonry, with walls twelve feet in thickness. It is embrasured for two tiers of guns, under bomb-proof casemates, and has one tier *en barbette*. Its

armament consists of 150 guns, and in time of war requires a garrison of six hundred and fifty men. The work cost the Federal Government about \$400,000. Its guns radiate at every point of the horizon. It is a very effective work. The full armament of the fort is not complete, but a sufficient number of guns are in battery to make a very good defense in conjunction with Fort Pickens. Below this fort is a water battery, which mounts some eight or ten guns. The interior of Fort McRae is provided with the necessary shot furnaces, officers' and soldiers' quarters, magazines, &c.

FORT BARRANCAS

is on the north of Pensacola Bay, and directly fronting the entrance to its mouth. The work is erected on the site of an old Spanish fort. The fort is a bastioned work, built of heavy masonry, and mounts forty-nine guns, and in time of war requires a garrison of two hundred and fifty men. The armament of the work is fully mounted, and its magazines are in good order. In the rear of the fort is a redoubt, which is auxiliary to Fort Barrancas. Some extensive repairs have recently been completed on this redoubt, and the flanking howitzers of scarp and counterscarp can be mounted with very little labor.

FORTS ON THE FLORIDA REEFS.

FORT CLINCH, AMELIA ISLAND, FLORIDA.

During the past year, the east, south and south-west bastions have been built to the springing of the gun-room arches; the curtain walls connecting them have been carried to the reference of the loop-holes; all the galleries have been finished with the exception of esphalting their roof surfaces and placing the door and widow frames; the gateway foundations of piers of sink gallery have also been laid; two lumber sheds and

service magazines of north bastion have been completed. Barbette platforms for the north and north-west bastions have been procured, and a large amount of materials accumulated for the working season. With the funds now in hand it is proposed to complete the masonry of the enceinte, and, as far as practicable, the embankment of the rampart; to put the ramparts of the two channel fronts in condition to receive their armament; to pave all the bastions in order to provide the flank of defense, and to put down the barbette platforms of the bastions bearing on the channels.

Assuming that the funds on hand are sufficient for the purposes described, to complete the work, there remain the embankment of the unfinished portions of land front, ramparts, breast-height walls, barbette platforms, excavation of ditch, embankment of counterscarp and covered way, breast-height, glacis, quarters, workshops and storehouse.

An appropriation of \$100,000 is estimated by the officer in charge to be sufficient for the operations stated. This amount will suffice to make the work susceptible of occupation and defense, if not to complete it in detail, but it is necessary to reduce the sum in the estimate presented.

FORT TAYLOR, KEY WEST, FLORIDA.

The year's operations have been chiefly directed towards the completion of the barbette tier and the third story of the soldiers' quarters. The earth filling of the entire parapet has been gathered and put in place, and the concrete covering laid from breast-height to scarp, formed around the circuit of the castle. The main arch roofs of the whole work have been asphalted, and the drainage brick courses, the lead flashings, the gutter arches and the manholes have all been completed within the season. The earth filling of the terreplein has been gathered and placed, and the concrete foundations (2' thick).

for all the Columbiad platforms (forty-six) have been formed. The walls and chimneys of the soldiers' quarters have been completed, all above the second floor forming part of the season's work. The masonry of the postern has been finished, and the main magazine and hall floor have been concreted. A section of the quarters has been put under roof, and some of the third story rooms plastered and partly finished. The roads for hauling materials have been extended and repaired, and a quantity of stone gathered and broken for concrete, to be used in the coverface.

The appropriation of \$70,000 for 1860-61, will be divided between finishing the castle and building the inclosing walls, and filling the inclosure of the coverface. This will provide for mounting the entire armament of the castle, and for inclosing the soldiers' quarters, besides plastering, and some other parts of the inside finish. It will also make an effective beginning to the coverface.

The operations for the year 1861-62 should be directed to completing the castle, to building the balance of the inclosing or sea wall of the coverface, to filling this inclosure with earth, the starting the piers and arches of the coverface, gun and store casemates, and to building the permanent wharf and bridge. For these objects the sum of \$150,000 is asked by the officer in charge, but this amount is necessarily reduced in the estimates presented.

FORT JEFFERSON, GARDEN KEY, TORTUGAS, FLORIDA.

During the year, one hundred and ten of the upper casemate arches have been formed, and the remaining thirty-six will soon be completed; the scarp wall has been raised from thirty to thirty-two and one-half feet above low water, and several small magazines have been fitted up.

The work may now be regarded as capable of making some defense, though it is in an incomplete condition.

Below we present a table of the location, number of guns and cost of the forts seized by the Southern States, and held by their troops:—

Fortifications.	Location.	Guns	Cost of Construction and Repairs.	Cost of Armament.
Fort Pulaski, . .	Savannah, . . .	150	\$923,859	\$138,032
Fort Jackson, . .	Savannah, . . .	14	125,000	11,830
Fort Morgan, . .	Mobile,	132	1,212,556	104,475
Fort Gaines, . .	Mobile,	89	20,000	66,473
Fort Macon, . .	Beaufort, N. C., .	61	460,000	48,920
Fort Caswell, . .	Oak Island, N. C.,	87	571,221	72,711
Fort Moultrie, . .	Charleston, . . .	54	75,301	48,732
Castle Pinckney, .	Charleston, . . .	25	43,809	23,906
Fort St. Philip, .	Louisiana, . . .	124	203,734	101,980
Fort Jackson, . .	Louisiana, . . .	150	817,608	123,669
Fort Pike, . . .	Louisiana, . . .	49	472,001	36,520
Total,		935	\$4,925,089	\$777,248
Total cost of the above eleven fortifications, . .				\$5,702,337

On the 15th of January, the Secretary of War, in compliance with a resolution asking information relative to the removal of the public arms from the Northern States, submitted the following communication from the Ordnance Office:—

ORDNANCE OFFICE, Washington, Jan. 15, 1861.

HON. J. HOLT, Secretary of War:

SIR—I have the honor to acknowledge the reference of a letter from the Hon. B. Stanton, asking for a statement of the distribution of arms from the armories to the arsenals and other places of deposit for safe keeping, from the 1st of January, 1860, to that of January 1, 1861, &c.

In compliance with your directions, I have the honor to report that on the 30th day of December, 1859, an order was received from the War Department, directing the transfer of one hundred and fifteen thousand muskets from the Springfield, Mass., and Watervliet, N. Y., arsenals, to different arsenals at the South. Orders were given, in obedience to

these instructions, on the 30th of May, 1860, and the arms were removed, during the past spring, from and to the places, as follows:

From Springfield armory, sixty-five thousand percussion muskets, calibre sixty-nine hundredths of an inch.

From Watertown arsenal, six thousand percussion rifles, calibre fifty-four hundredths of an inch.

From Watervliet arsenal, four thousand percussion rifles, calibre fifty-four hundredths of an inch.

Of which there were sent as follows:

	Percussion Muskets.	Alt'd Muskets.	P. Rifles.
Charleston, (S. C.,) arsenal.....	9,280	5,720	2,000
North Carolina arsenal.....	15,408	9,520	2,000
Augusta, (Ga.,) arsenal.....	12,380	7,620	2,000
Mount Vernon, Ala.....	9,280	5,720	2,000
Baton Rouge, La.....	18,520	11,420	2,000

The arms thus transferred which were at the Charleston arsenal, the Mount Vernon arsenal and the Baton Rouge arsenal, have been seized by the authorities of the several States of South Carolina, Alabama and Louisiana, and are no longer in possession of the Ordnance Department. Those stored at Augusta arsenal and at North Carolina, are still in charge of officers of this department.

In addition to the foregoing, there have been transfers from the armories to different arsenals, as the exigencies of the service demanded, for immediate issues to the army and to the States, under the act of April, 231,808, and which I infer are not intended to be embraced in the call of the House of Representatives.

H. K. CRAIG, *Colonel of Ordnance.*

It will be seen, from the above report, that one hundred and fifteen thousand stand of arms were ordered, on the 30th day of December, 1859, to be distributed to the Southern States. These arms were so deposited, that when the arrangements for the secession of the Slave States were complete, they could be easily seized and used against the Federal Government. The seizure of the arms commenced on the

December, 1860, and by the first of February, the entire amount of arms were in the hands of the secessionists. Accompanying the arms was an immense amount of ammunition and ordnance stores.

The value of the Federal property seized by the Southern States would reach many millions of dollars. The forts alone would amount to perhaps six millions, beside the custom houses and other property. How it was managed that this property fell so easy a prey to the disloyal States, can be more easily conjectured than explained.

CHAPTER X.

SECESSION OF GEORGIA, LOUISIANA, AND TEXAS—INAUGURAL
ADDRESS OF JEFFERSON DAVIS.

On the 19th day of January, Georgia passed an Ordinance of Secession, and declared her connection with the Federal Government dissolved. There was much opposition to the secession of the State, and in the Convention a strong Union feeling prevailed. The day before the act of separation was adopted, resolutions were introduced to ascertain the state of the Convention. The resolutions declared—first, it was the right and duty of Georgia to secede; and, second, appointing a Committee of Seventeen, to report an Ordinance of Secession. The resolutions were passed by a small majority—yeas, 165; nays, 130.

The ordinance of separation was passed with some difficulty, and on the 21st the Convention was compelled to pass the following preamble and resolution, to compel the dissenting members to sign it:

Whereas, The lack of unanimity in the action of this Convention on the passage of the Ordinance of Secession indicates a difference of opinion existing amongst the members of this Convention, which is owing, not so much as to the rights which Georgia claims or the wrongs of which she complains, as it is to the remedy and its application before resorting to other means of redress;

And whereas, It is desirable to give expression to the intention which really exists among all the members of this Convention to sustain the State in the course of action which she has pronounced to be proper for the occasion; therefore

Resolved, That all the members of this Convention, includ-

ing those who voted against the ordinance, as well as those who voted for it, will sign the same as a pledge of the unanimous declaration of this Convention to sustain and defend the State in her course, and remedy with all its responsibilities and consequences, without regard to individual approval or disapproval of the adoption of the ordinance.

It is evident from the nature of this coercive measure, that there were loyal men in that Convention, but were compelled to succumb to the majority. There can be but little doubt, that had the Federal Government at that time, by some determined and well-directed act, gave the Union sentiment in Georgia and North Carolina a ray of hope, the South would have been divided against itself. But the power that should have sustained them, suffered the Union to crumble to pieces, and buried those true hearts beneath its fall.

The State of Louisiana passed an ordinance of separation on the 28th, and almost immediately following it, Captain Breshwood, a Virginian, surrendered the revenue cutter McClellan to the State. On the 31st the United States Branch Mint was seized, and \$511,000 captured by the State authorities. The seizure of the public property continued to be one of the principal objects of the secessionists, aided by disloyal officers in charge of it.

Texas seceded on the 1st of February, and the day following, Captain Morrison, a Georgian, in command of the revenue cutter Cass, then laying in Mobile Bay, surrendered it to the authorities of the State of Alabama.

By the 6th of February, enough of the Southern States had seceded, to warrant the calling of a Convention to form a Southern Confederacy. On that day the delegates met in Convention, at Montgomery, Alabama, and, after a session of three days, Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, was elected Provisional President, and Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, was elected Vice-President, by a unanimous vote. A Pro-

visional Constitution had been previously adopted, and in many respects it was nothing more than a copy of the Federal Constitution.

On the 18th day of February, Jefferson Davis was inaugurated at Montgomery, Alabama, as President of the Confederate States of America. It was a great holiday and festive occasion for the inhabitants of Montgomery, and perhaps the most important day that city ever witnessed. Mr. Davis followed the fashion of the Federal President, and delivered an inaugural address to the gaping and excited crowd.

Mr. Davis commenced his address with an humble distrust of his ability to discharge the duties of his office, and relying upon the virtue and patriotism of the people to sustain him. He says :

"I enter upon the duties of the office to which I have been chosen, with hope that the beginning of our career as a Confederacy may not be obstructed by hostile opposition to our enjoyment of the separate existence and independence which we have asserted, and which, with the blessing of Providence, we intend to maintain. Our present condition, achieved in a manner unprecedented in the history of nations, illustrates the American idea that governments rest upon the consent of the governed, and that it is right for the people to alter and abolish governments whenever they become destructive to the ends for which they were established."

It is a fact beyond dispute, that the secession of the Southern States, and the successful organization of a Confederacy, almost under the shadow of the Federal Capital, is a feat unparalleled in the history of nations. This fact is made a subject of special regard in the address, and from its very tone indicates some fear of opposition from the Federal Government. The dearest object, however, of the project had been peaceably accomplished, and a Southern Confederacy had been actually and positively established. Men in the

South who, before this era, had been loyal, now forgot their loyalty, and under the influence of the novelty of thing, they joined in the movement. They had looked upon the Federal Government with pride and admiration, and loved the name of American citizen. Insults and wrongs upon the flag had been met with prompt attention, and the rights of the American citizen protected in every land, and respected by all nations. When the Federal flag was fired upon at Charleston, the people at the South as well as the North stood appalled at the atrocity of the act, and the guns at Fort Sumter were expected to belch forth an iron punishment upon the insulters. But the act was quietly passed over, and the Federal Government humbled in the dust. By this silence thousands of men who cherished a feeling of patriotism and love for the Union, turned in disgust from its weakness, and joined with that which seemed to possess life and energy. This was but a natural consequence, and has ever been the character of man.

The Federal Government excused this lukewarmness, upon the plea that it did not wish to inaugurate civil war. It has ever been a settled policy in all governments, that the formation, within the dominions of any government, of organizations, the object of which is to overthrow, or establish a rival government, is a declaration of war, and is met by the most severe measures, and its originators punished. If the firing upon the Federal flag, and the seizure of the Government arms and property, were not just cause of war, it would be useless to search history for a cause. England, France, Russia, or Austria would have hurled upon the originators of a scheme so daring, the thunder of their whole military force.

The position is then taken by Mr. Davis, that the South, as an agricultural people, must cherish free trade. That the fewest practicable restrictions should be placed upon those of whom they would buy, and to whom they would sell. In

speaking of the Constitution, and the probable admission of Northern States into the Southern Confederacy, he says :

“With a Constitution differing only from that of our fathers in so far as it is explanatory of their well-known intent, freed from sectional conflicts which have interfered with the pursuit of the general welfare, *it is not unusual to expect that the States from which we have recently parted, may seek to unite their fortunes with ours*, under the government we have instituted. For this your Constitution makes adequate provision : but beyond this, if I mistake not, *the judgment and will of the people are, that union with the States from which they have separated is neither practicable nor desirable.*”

If (according to Mr. Davis) the Constitution of the United States was so well adapted to the government of the Southern States, and suited their purpose so well that the Confederate Congress immediately adopted it, where the necessity of separation ? Was there not beneath all this representation of infringement upon the rights of the South, and with which the leaders of the movement skilfully and secretly coaxed the people to follow them, a political ambition, that reached its climax at the inauguration of Mr. Davis, which, in the enthusiasm of the moment, he revealed in a few unguarded words ? The caution against the admission of Northern States, was perhaps premature and unnecessary. Again he says :

“Actuated solely by a desire to preserve our own rights and to promote our own welfare, the separation of the Confederate States has been marked by no aggression upon others, and followed by no domestic convulsion. Our industrial pursuits have received no check, the cultivation of our fields progresses as heretofore, and even should we be involved in war, there would be no considerable diminution in the production of the staples which have constituted our exports, in which the commercial world has an interest scarcely less than our own. This common interest of producer and consumer can only be intercepted by an exterior force, which should obstruct its transmission to foreign markets, a course of con-

duct which would be detrimental to manufacturing and commercial interests abroad. Should reason guide the action of the Government from which we have separated, a policy so detrimental to the civilized world, the Northern States included, could not be dictated by even a stronger desire to inflict injury upon us; but if it be otherwise, a terrible responsibility will rest upon it, and the suffering of millions will bear testimony to the policy and wickedness of our aggressors."

Mr. Davis must have labored under a great mistake, or, as a statesman, been deficient in a knowledge of the country he was called upon to govern. That the South at this time was in a depressed condition, is a fact beyond dispute, caused by the action of South Carolina, and the States which followed her. No clearances of vessels could be granted, for under the regulations of the States such papers were not recognized by any nation. As a consequence, her commerce was paralyzed, and quickly following upon this her citizens were financially depressed. Laws were passed, in most if not all the Southern States, repudiating the payment of debts due in the Northern States, which at once destroyed their credit and their honor. But that a deeper and more gloomy depression settled upon the Southern States, history will record in its proper place.

CHAPTER XI.

PARSON BROWNLOW AND GEORGE D. PRENTICE—THE INAUGURATION OF MR. LINCOLN.

On the 18th of February, General Twiggs, who had command of the United States forces at San Antonio, in Texas, after a lengthy negotiation, surrendered the Federal property and the troops to the State of Texas. He returned to his home in Tennessee, accepted a commission under the Confederate Government, and took command of a portion of her troops.

The secession of Tennessee had been contemplated, notwithstanding there was a strong opposition. The Union sentiment was kept alive by a few patriots, who fearlessly opposed the secessionists, at the risk of life and property. Foremost among the men who stood forward and avowed their fidelity to the Federal Government, was William G. Brownlow, more widely known as Parson Brownlow, of Knoxville, Tennessee, editor and proprietor of the Knoxville Whig. He was opposed to the principles of the Republican Party, and to the election of Mr. Lincoln, but he did not believe that secession was the remedy for what the South termed their wrongs. His manner of writing was bold and fearless, his articles short, but his meaning plain and comprehensive. Shortly after General Twiggs had taken command of the Confederate forces, he sent a note to Parson Brownlow, who was a clergyman, requesting him to accept the position of Chaplain to his Brigade. Parson Brownlow published the following reply :

KNOXVILLE, April 22, 1861.

GEN. GIDEON J. PILLOW :—I have just received your message, through Mr. Sale, requesting me to serve as Chaplain to



T.S. Wagner, Lith, Philad^a

MAJ. GEN^L GEO. B. MC CLELLAN.

your Brigade in the Southern Army; and in the spirit of kindness in which this request is made, but in all candor, I return for an answer, that when I shall have made up my mind to go to hell, I will cut my throat and go *direct*, and not travel round by way of the Southern Confederacy.

I am, very respectfully, &c.,

W. G. BROWNLOW.

This answer, addressed to the General, was inserted in the Knoxville Whig of April 27th, 1861. When every Federal flag in the State had been brought down, Parson Brownlow kept the Stars and Stripes floating above his house. He was threatened, he was menaced, he was cajoled, he was flattered, he was coaxed, and bribes were offered him, but no money could buy his patriotism, or threats move his loyalty. Amid all the storms that howled around him, and all the efforts to subdue him, he stood bravely to the work for the Union, and condemned secession as a rebellion.

Another patriot, and one perhaps who saved his State from the spoiler, was George D. Prentice, of Louisville, Kentucky, editor of the Louisville Journal. He is well known as a sharp, witty writer, scathing and cutting where a subject is distasteful and obnoxious. A patriot at heart, and a lover of his country, he turned his pen against its enemies with a fearful power. They felt its force; and, chagrined and annoyed at the exposure of their evil scheming, they resorted to every means to obtain its silence. But Mr. Prentice was not to be moved from his loyalty, but continued to ply his lashings to his country's enemies.

It was believed that a deeply laid and well digested plot had been concocted by the secessionists, to seize Washington, and prevent the inauguration of Mr. Lincoln. By many the subject was regarded as a premature and unwarranted alarm, for which there was no reasonable or plausible excuse. But General Scott, the Commander-in-Chief of the Federal forces,

thought differently; and, in a manner that proved the wisdom and strategical ability of the veteran soldier, he commenced the assembling of the Federal troops in and about Washington, so secretly and skillfully that it attracted but little attention. The entire Federal force in and near Washington, amounted to nine hundred and eighty-four men. The volunteer force of Washington numbered six hundred, and that of Georgetown four hundred, making a total of nineteen hundred and eighty-four men.

On Monday, the 11th of February, Mr. Lincoln left Springfield, the place of his residence, in the State of Illinois, for the Federal Capitol. His journey was a perfect ovation, and clearly exhibited to the President elect, that the people looked to him to bring out of the confusion and distrust that surrounded the Government, a plain, comprehensive, and determined policy. They gave the man of their choice every evidence of their devotion and patriotism, by receiving him among them with every mark of honor and distinction.

It was the intention of Mr. Lincoln to proceed to Baltimore from Philadelphia, by way of Harrisburg, the Capital of Pennsylvania. At the latter place he took part in the ceremonies incident to the memorable day—the 22d day of February—it being the anniversary of the birth of George Washington. The following day he was to proceed to Baltimore, and publicly pass through that city. Whisperings of assassination and violence were rife for some days previous, and it was generally believed that his appearance would be the signal for an outbreak of the long pent-up feelings of prominent secessionists. But Mr. Lincoln, through the advice of friends, determined to thwart the plot, and save the city from the impending disgrace. Late in the evening of the 22d of February he entered a special train, prepared for the occasion, passed through Philadelphia and Baltimore, and when day

dawned on the morning of the 23d, the President elect surprised the citizens of Washington by his unexpected appearance among them. The good policy of the movement was subsequently proved by the acts of the very citizens who were most eager to give him a glorious reception. The suddenness of the movement was attributed to General Scott, who, with his usual wisdom and foresight, had penetrated to the secret designs of the plotters.

It had been the boast of the secessionists that Mr. Lincoln should never be inaugurated as President of the United States. Nor were those threats cautiously or secretly made, but boldly and openly avowed. As the day of the inauguration approached, there were some misgivings and fears of its successful accomplishment. To General Scott the people turned as a father, and every preparation made by the noble chief for the safety and protection of the city, gave a degree of relief, and when he announced that the great event would progress peaceably and quietly, many were the blessings pronounced upon the patriot and the soldier.

The 4th day of March dawned upon Washington, and soon the busy throng filled the streets to overflowing. Troops were seen in almost every direction, and so posted that they could be easily concentrated at any given point.

General Scott remained at his head-quarters, and through the information brought him by orderlies, who were constantly on the move, carefully watched the progress of events, and was prepared to meet a disturbance at whatever point it might occur. The day was unusually beautiful, the sun shone clear and brilliant, and the immense throng enjoyed the pageant with marked pleasure and delight. It was estimated that fifty thousand people were assembled in front of the stand, where the ceremonies took place. At half-past one o'clock, Mr. Lincoln commenced the delivery of his inaugural address.

During its delivery he was frequently cheered, and more especially when patriotic sentences burst upon the ears of the people.

At the conclusion of the address, Chief Justice Taney administered the oath of office. The inauguration was peaceably concluded, and the Capitol of the Federal Government preserved from violence.

CHAPTER XII.

PRESIDENT LINCOLN'S INAUGURAL ADDRESS—THE BOMBARDMENT OF FORT SUMTER.

Mr. Lincoln opened his address, briefly stating that he did not consider it necessary to address them on matters of general administration, and about which there was but little anxiety.

We quote from the address :

“Apprehension seems to exist among the people of the Southern States that, by the accession of a Republican Administration, their property and their peace and personal security are to be endangered. There has never been any reasonable cause for such apprehension. Indeed, the most ample evidence to the contrary has all the while existed and been open to their inspection. It is found in nearly all the published speeches of him who now addresses you. I do but quote from one of those speeches when I declare that ‘I have no purpose, directly or indirectly, to interfere with the institution of slavery in the States where it exists ; believe I have no lawful right to do so, and I have no inclination to do so.’ Those who nominated and elected me did so with a full knowledge that I had made this and many similar declarations, and had never recanted them. And more than this, they placed in the platform for my acceptance, and as a law to themselves and to me, the clear and emphatic resolution which I now read :

“ ‘ *Resolved*, That the maintenance inviolate of the rights of the States, and especially the right of each State to order and control its own domestic institutions according to its own judgment exclusively, is essential to that balance of power on which the perfection and endurance of our political fabric depend, and we denounce the lawless invasion by armed force of the soil of any State or Territory, no matter under what pretext, as the gravest of crimes.’ ”

“I now reiterate these sentiments, and in doing so I only press upon the public attention the most conclusive evidence of which the case is susceptible, that the property, peace and security of no section are to be in anywise endangered by the now incoming Administration. I add, too, that all the protection which, consistently with the Constitution and the laws, can be given, will be cheerfully given to all the States, when lawfully demanded, for whatever cause, as cheerfully to one section as to another.”

It will be seen from the above, that all idea or intention on the part of the incoming Administration, to interfere with the rights of the South, were most emphatically and positively denied. He then takes up the clause of the Constitution of the United States, upon which all the laws for the rendition of fugitives has been based, and boldly affirms that it includes fugitive slaves as well.

A review is taken upon the right of a State to secede, and Mr. Lincoln fairly arrives at the conclusion, that such right does not exist. He contends that the compact to form the Union was freely and willingly entered into, and in forming that compact the Union was perfected, and the right of separation ceased. He says :

“But if the destruction of the Union by one or by a part only of the States be lawfully possible, the Union is less than before, the Constitution having lost the vital element of perpetuity.

“It follows from these views that no State, upon its own mere motion, can lawfully get out of the Union ; that resolves and ordinances to that effect are legally void, and that acts of violence within any State or States, against the authority of the United States, are insurrectionary or revolutionary, according to circumstances. I therefore consider that, in view of the Constitution and the laws, the Union is unbroken, and to the extent of my ability I shall take care, as the Constitution itself expressly enjoins upon me, that the laws of the Union be faithfully executed in all the States. Doing this I deem to

be only a simple duty on my part. I shall perfectly perform it, so far as is practicable, unless my rightful masters, the American people, shall withhold the requisition, or in some authoritative manner direct the contrary. I trust this will not be regarded as a menace, but only as the declared purpose of the Union that it will constitutionally defend and maintain itself.

“In doing this there need be no bloodshed or violence, and there shall be none, unless it is forced upon the national authority. The power confided to me will be used to hold, occupy and possess the property and places belonging to the Government, and collect the duties and imposts; but beyond what may be necessary for these objects there will be no invasion—no using of force against or amongst the people anywhere.”

Mr. Lincoln denied all intention or desire to use force, unless the necessity was thrust upon the Government. To occupy and hold the forts and the United States property, and collect the revenues, he gently hinted, but in terms so conclusive and comprehensive, that the meaning could not be mistaken. This was construed in the South as meaning war, and as menacing and threatening. In the North it was received as a mild and conciliatory document, so cautiously and critically drawn, as not to commit the incoming Administration. Its general tone was regarded as patriotic, and emanating from a mind that fully felt the responsibilities and difficulties incumbering the duties of the office just about to be assumed. To the hearts of loyal citizens everywhere, it sent a thrill of joy, and banished the deep gloom that had settled on the country. They believed that the Government would be administered with the utmost fidelity, dealing fairly and justly with all sections.

Immediately after the inauguration, the names of the following gentlemen were sent to the Senate for confirmation, having been selected by Mr. Lincoln as members of his Cabinet:

Secretary of the Treasury, Salmon P. Chase, of Ohio;

Secretary of State, William H. Seward, of New York ;
Secretary of War, Simon Cameron, of Pennsylvania ;
Secretary of the Navy, Gideon Welles, of Connecticut ;
Postmaster General, Montgomery Blair, of Maryland ;
Attorney General, Edward Bates, of Missouri.

The peaceable and successful inauguration of Mr. Lincoln, seemed to inflame the minds of the leaders of secession in the South, and their position instantly became more hostile and threatening. They easily perceived that beneath all there was a determined will to administer the Government fairly and justly, but to administer it according to law. They feared that the peaceable measures, and the declaration not to interfere with the institutions of the States, would have the effect of pacifying those who were not over enthusiastic in the secession cause, and quickly overthrow the grand chimera of a Southern Confederacy. It was necessary to operate while the excitement existed, and before the people had time to reflect, and operate quickly and boldly. South Carolina was the most fierce and reckless, and that State was to be plunged first into the disgraceful position of opening civil war, and without it the leaders clearly saw that it would be impossible to sustain the Southern Confederacy. Give the people time to reflect, and they would soon discover the weakness and uncertainty of the fabric erected at Montgomery.

During the month of March but little of importance occurred, except the surrender of Fort Brown, in Texas, by Captain Hill, of the United States Army. On the 6th of March, the Confederate Congress passed an act establishing an army of the Confederate States. It seemed as if they were watching the movements of the Federal Government, and anxiously expecting hostilities to commence. But the new Administration moved evenly on, regardless of the threats and the uneasy position of the Southern Confederacy. But, during this time the position of the garrison in Fort Sumter had become more

perilous. The supplies that Major Anderson obtained from Charleston, were likely to be cut off at any time, and threats to that effect were numerous, and of daily occurrence. The Government was aware of this, and the condition of the garrison received the attention of the Cabinet. At length the steamship *Atlantic* was chartered by the Government, and, with Barry's battery, and troops and provisions for the fort, left New York on the 7th of April. The Government immediately informed the authorities of South Carolina that an unarmed vessel would be sent to the relief of Fort Sumter. The immediate and emphatic reply was, that the vessel would be fired into if she attempted to enter the port of Charleston. The Federal Government then determined that the fort should be supplied, peaceably, if possible; if not, by force.

It was perceivable that matters were approaching a crisis, and hostilities would soon commence. The Southern Confederacy had sent Commissioners to Washington to obtain the recognition of the Confederate States of America as an independent government. For some time they had been knocking at the official quarters of the President for admission, but had not been allowed to enter. On the 9th of April they made a final demand, and were informed they could not enter. Full of wrath, and swearing, by their Government, vengeance, they hastily left Washington, and returned to the arms of the much-abused Southern Confederacy. This was the signal for war, and on the 11th of April, at 2 o'clock, Messrs. Chesnut, Chisholm, Roger A. Pryor, and Lee, Aids to General Beauregard, were deputed to carry the message of Beauregard to Major Anderson, commanding him to evacuate Fort Sumter; but the latter emphatically declined obeying the command. Later in the afternoon of the 11th, General Beauregard sent a message to Major Anderson, requesting him not to fire on the State batteries, and they would not molest him.

The Major was determined not to be hurried from the fort, and replied that, if not ordered to evacuate, or supplied with provisions, he would evacuate at noon on the 15th. He was notified at half-past 3 o'clock on the morning of the 12th, that the batteries would open on the fort in one hour.

The announcement that hostilities would commence on the morning of the 12th, created the most intense excitement in the City of Charleston. The streets were filled with people the whole night, and thousands spent the entire night on the tops of houses, determined to see the track of the first shell, and hear the booming of the first shot, that should inaugurate civil war in the United States. A strange sort of madness seemed to have come over the people of Charleston, and in a strange sort of frenzy and excitement they watched the approaching storm, that was to devastate their homes. There was no principle involved in the sacrifice they were about to make; their homes had not been invaded, nor their rights infringed or denied them. Had it been to establish freedom, and freedom's institutions—to overthrow a usurping and tyrannical government, whose encroachings had pinched them beyond endurance—their devotion to a cause so noble would have been worthy of all commendation. But, on the contrary, they were bound, soul and body, by some incomprehensible influence, to the wicked and disappointed political demagogues, who led them blindly on to their own destruction.

The announcement in the fort, that the State batteries would open on it in one hour, was not received with joy and a hearty welcome, for the brave garrison were too weak to manage the immense armament of the fort with ease, but still they did not flinch from the contest. But they were determined the Stars and Stripes should not be struck without showing the enemy that they were resolved to give it the best defense their weak condition would admit. Preparations were immediately made for action, and, when the one hour had

expired, far away in the black distance there was a bright flash, a booming across the waters, and an iron messenger from Fort Johnson came hissing through the air, and exploded near the fort. Instantly after, the whole horizon was lighted up by the flash and glare of seventeen batteries, pouring a monstrous flood of shot and shell upon the fort. The garrison quietly witnessed this pyrotechnic display, until seven o'clock in the morning, when they were divided into the following reliefs: the first relief was under Captain Doubleday; the second relief was under Surgeon Crawford; the third relief was under Lieutenant Snyder.

The fort opened on Cummings' Point battery with two thirty-two-pounders and one forty-two-pounder, creating considerable alarm among the troops. Upon Fort Moultrie and the floating battery were opened one forty-two-pounder and five thirty-two-pounders. The day before the bombardment, a new battery on Sullivan's Island had been unmasked, and this, in connection with the floating battery, was very troublesome. A few rounds were fired from the barbette guns, when it was found that the shot and shells came in too thick, and the troops were then withdrawn to the casemates on the lower tier, these only replying to the enemy's batteries. On Friday the barracks caught fire several times, but it was successfully extinguished. During the whole day they replied to the enemy's batteries, serving their guns with precision and certainty, and creating immense havoc in the enemy's works.

When night had fairly set in, the firing from the fort ceased, but the enemy continued to throw shot and shell at intervals, to keep the garrison from obtaining any rest. Early on Saturday morning, the cannonade commenced with renewed vigor upon the fort, and again the hot shot set fire to the barracks and officers' quarters. The material of which they were constructed was light and inflammable, and the fire spread rapidly. It raged with such violence, that the magazine was in great

danger, and ninety barrels of gunpowder were thrown into the sea. The men were almost suffocated; but, by wetting their handkerchiefs, and laying flat on the ground, they saved themselves. It seemed, too, as if Providence, in its goodness, was watching over them; for when they were in the greatest extremity from the heat and smoke, a refreshing breeze came to their relief, and drove the smoke out of the fort.

A second difficulty arose. The cartridge bags had been exhausted, and five men were detailed to manufacture the article from shirts and blankets. For a few days previous the garrison had been without bread, and had lived almost exclusively on salt bacon. Though they were in an exhausted condition, from this circumstance alone, when the bombardment began, they stood nobly to the work, and gave the enemies of their country to understand that, though almost famished, they could strike fiercely for their country and their homes.

The magazine was surrounded by fire, and their supplies cut off, but still they fought on. A shot carried away the flag; but scarcely had it dropped to the ground, when a Mr. Hardt, from New York, a volunteer, snatched it up, and, in the hottest of the fire, nailed it to the flag-staff.

When the flames were raging most fiercely in the fort, ex-Senator Wigfall, who was serving as an aid on the staff of Beauregard, presented himself at one of the port-holes, and desired to know if Major Anderson would surrender, as the General desired to avoid further bloodshed. The Major gallantly replied that he would evacuate on his own terms, and no other. At half-past 12 o'clock, a second deputation approached the fort, and informed the Major his terms were accepted, and at fifty-five minutes past 12 o'clock the flag was hauled down. The terms of evacuation were most honorable to the garrison, and conclusively proved that though they were but one hundred strong, they were an equal match for the eight thousand enemies who surrounded them.

CHAPTER XIII.

EVACUATION OF FORT SUMTER.

Major Anderson dictated his own terms of evacuation, and they were accepted. The garrison were permitted to carry away the flag, and salute it with fifty guns, remove all the company arms and property, and to have every facility to remove the troops to any part of the United States. Such terms could never emanate from the conquered, or be accepted by the conquerer, how then could the Confederate forces claim a victory?

Before the bombardment began, Major Anderson proposed the same terms, and they were indignantly declined. The batteries were opened upon the fort, for what purpose? To compel the garrison to unconditionally surrender. They were determined to gain an absolute victory over the Federal forces, and take them prisoners of war. But after a bombardment of thirty-four hours, the garrison were still unconquered, and ready to fight. The Confederates were defeated, their works became untenable, and they were compelled to accept the very terms they had refused, thus actually acknowledging their weakness and inability to capture the fort. It is a well established maxim, "That the conquerer dictates the terms, and the conquered accepts them."

On Sunday morning, the 14th, the steamer Isabel anchored off the fort. The baggage of the garrison was put on board the Confederate steamer Clinch, and transferred to the Isabel. The garrison were still under arms, and when about to depart, a portion were detailed to fire a salute. As the second round

was being fired, a premature explosion occurred, killing two men and wounding four. This was the only casualty that happened the garrison. During the bombardment, two men were wounded, but not seriously, by splinters, caused by a shot entering a port-hole. When the last of the fifty guns had been fired, the garrison gave three cheers, lowered the flag, and embarked to the tune of "Yankee Doodle," and "Hail to the Chief." On Monday the Isabel steamed out of the harbor, and the garrison were taken on board the Baltic, and set sail for New York; where they arrived on Thursday, April the 18th.

The fleet that had been dispatched on the 7th to succor the fort, arrived off the entrance during the engagement. The Baltic arrived on Friday morning, the Pawnee and Pocahontas on Saturday, but the steam tugs were blown to sea and did not reach the harbor. A heavy gale was constantly blowing, and prevented the vessels from crossing the bar.

The Confederates had obtained Fort Sumter, but at a cost they were unwilling the world should know. They represented that the contest upon their part had been bloodless; but subsequent events proved that many mothers mourned lost sons, and many wives looked anxiously for the return of husbands, who sleep in their graves near Charleston. When inquiries were made for friends, who were known to have been in the engagement, "they had been speedily sent North on duty." Fort Moultrie was garrisoned with about one thousand men, and its walls were riddled in every direction by the guns of Fort Sumter. Shot and shell had entered it, but the report was "nobody hurt." Over this the Confederates rejoiced, and it was echoed from one to another "nobody hurt," but it was accompanied with a *query*.

Throughout the South there was the greatest rejoicing over the "bloodless victory." Salutes were fired in every town, and parades and speeches were abundant. The choler of the

chivalry was aroused, and the battle at Charleston seemed only to sharpen their courage, and made them itch to perform glorious and thrilling deeds. "To arms!" was the cry from Charleston to New Orleans. They represented that the Federal Government had commenced a war of aggression, and that the Abolitionists were determined to free their slaves and arm them against their masters. Their homes and their firesides had been invaded, and they were to be subjugated and brought beneath the heel of a Northern tyrant. The minds of the Southern people were thus inflamed and excited by those monstrous stories of the leaders, and without properly inquiring into the truth of them, rushed to arms, as they supposed, to protect and preserve their rights. Laboring under the hallucinations caused by misrepresentation, they swelled the ranks of the Confederate army to thousands.

Below we give a few of the news items of the day of the bombardment.

RECEPTION OF THE NEWS IN THE SOUTH.

MOBILE, ALA., April 13.

The announcement of the surrender of Fort Sumter was received with immense cheering by the crowds who have been gathering in the vicinity of the newspaper offices all day. The Confederate and Palmetto flags are flying everywhere. Salutes are firing and bells ringing. The people are greatly rejoiced.

AUGUSTA, GA., April 13.

A hundred guns were fired here to-day in honor of the victory of the Confederate army.

MONTGOMERY, ALA., April 13.

Dispatches from Governor Pickens, to the Secretary of War, were read by the clerk of the War Department from the Executive buildings during the day in the presence of President Davis and his Cabinet. They gave rise to general rejoicing in all circles. Seven guns were fired in honor of the surrender of Fort Sumter.

NEW ORLEANS, April 13.

There was a grand muster of the city volunteer companies this morning. Preparations are being made to defend the Mississippi river in the best possible manner.

In the North, the bombardment of Fort Sumter caused one single burst of patriotism, that echoed from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and from Maine to Maryland and Western Virginia. The people rose as from a slumber, and shook off the lethargy that seemed to have possessed them. War had been actually commenced; their flag had been fired upon, and the Government property forcibly seized. They were now ready to aid the Government in maintaining its rights, if the Government would firmly sustain itself. In the cities the excitement was most intense, and the resolve to root out all disloyal persons most emphatic. The streets were patrolled by men of property, integrity and standing in the community, and every man made to display his colors. Streets and houses were decorated with the Stars and Stripes, and Union badges were worn by all classes. Meetings were held in every section of the country, and resolutions passed to sustain the Administration. The people at the North felt that they had not inaugurated the war—that they were not the aggressors—and the sin was not upon their heads. They had offered terms of peace; they had offered conciliatory measures, but all had been indignantly rejected. It was but the battling of the majority to sustain their rights against the aggressions of a defeated minority. They turned toward the President they had elected, and legally installed into office, as if asking what course he would pursue. Was he equal to the crisis that had now come upon the country, or would he shrink from the responsibility, and cast it upon the shoulders of Congress, or some other branch of the government, equally slow?

On Monday, the 15th of April, the people heard a voice

from Washington—it was the President, calling upon them for seventy-five thousand volunteers, to defend the Capitol and the country. Instantly the drum and fife pealed forth the stirring martial music, and, as if suddenly changed by some magic, the citizen, in a moment, was transformed into a soldier. Every vacant hall and room in town and city was opened as recruiting stations, and the public squares shut against pleasure seekers, but open as drill grounds for the soldier. There was one universal feeling of loyalty—one sentiment only filled the hearts of men—“*the Union must and shall be preserved.*” Prayers were offered in the churches, and sermons preached from the pulpit, for the preservation of the Union. In the public places of amusement the National airs were hailed with delight, patriotic songs were loudly encored, the audience frequently rising to their feet, and with uncovered heads joining in the chorus. “The Union forever!” was the watch-word that hurried men to arms, and “*God speed the good cause,*” the parting blessing of wives, mothers, and sisters, and those whose grey hairs and crooked limbs prevented them from following where their hearts were going. The question was not asked, “Who will go to defend his country and his flag?” but every able-bodied man resolved in his heart, “I will go!” A more sublime spectacle the world never witnessed before, and a unanimity more perfect would be impossible.

The proclamation of President Lincoln was received favorably throughout the North, and positive assurances given the Administration of the loyalty of the people, and their firm support in the trying crisis.

BY THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.

A PROCLAMATION.

Whereas, The laws of the United States have been for some time past, and are now, opposed, and the execution thereof obstructed in the States of South Carolina, Georgia, Ala-

bama, Florida, Mississippi, Louisiana, and Texas, by combinations too powerful to be suppressed by the ordinary course of judicial proceedings, or by the powers vested in the Marshals by law,

Now therefore, I, Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States, in virtue of the power in me vested by the Constitution and the laws, have thought fit to call forth, and hereby do call forth, the militia of the several States of the Union, to the aggregate number of seventy-five thousand, in order to suppress the said combinations, and to cause the laws to be duly executed. The details for this object will be immediately communicated to the State authorities, through the War Department.

I appeal to all loyal citizens to favor, facilitate, and aid this effort to maintain the honor, the integrity and the existence of our National Union, and the perpetuity of the popular Government, and to redress the wrongs already long enough endured.

I deem it proper to say that the first service assigned to the forces hereby called forth, will probably be to repossess the forts, places and property which have been seized from the Union, and in every event the utmost care will be observed, consistently with the objects aforesaid, to avoid any devastation, any destruction of, or interference with property, or any disturbance of peaceful citizens in any part of the country.

And I hereby command the persons composing the combinations aforesaid, to disperse, and retire peaceably to their respective abodes within twenty days from this date.

Deeming that the present condition of public affairs presents an extraordinary occasion, I do hereby, in virtue of the power in me vested by the Constitution, convene both Houses of Congress. The Senators and Representatives are therefore summoned to assemble, at their respective Chambers, at twelve o'clock, noon, on Thursday, the 4th of July next, then and there to consider and determine such measures as, in their wisdom, the public safety and interest may seem to demand.

In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand, and caused the seal of the United States to be affixed.

Done at the City of Washington, this 15th day of April, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-

one, and of the independence of the United States, the eighty-fifth.

(Signed)

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

By the President,

WM. H. SEWARD, *Secretary of State*.

The following circular was issued from the War Office, and directed to the Governors of the States, who were required to furnish troops :

WAR DEPARTMENT, WASHINGTON, April, 1861.

SIR:—Under the act of Congress “for calling forth the militia to execute the laws of the Union, suppress insurrections, repel invasions,” &c., approved February 28th, 1795, I have the honor to request your Excellency to cause to be immediately detached from the militia of your State the quota designated in the table below, to serve as infantry or riflemen for the period of three months, unless sooner discharged.

Your Excellency will please communicate to me the time at or about which your quota will be expected at its rendezvous, as it will be met as soon as practicable by an officer or officers to muster it into the service and pay of the United States. At the same time the oath of fidelity to the United States will be administered to every officer and man.

The mustering officer will be instructed to receive no man, under the rank of commissioned officer, who is in years apparently over forty-five or under eighteen, or who is not in physical strength and vigor.

TABLE OF QUOTAS.

States.	Total of Officers.	Total of Men.	Aggregate.
Maine.....	37	743	780
New Hampshire.....	37	743	780
Vermont.....	37	743	780
Massachusetts.....	74	1,486	1,560
Rhode Island.....	37	743	780
Connecticut.....	37	743	780
New York.....	649	12,631	13,280
Carried forward....	908	17,832	18,740

States.	Total of Officers.	Total of Men.	Aggregate.
Brought forward.....	908	17,832	18,740
Pennsylvania.....	612	11,888	12,500
New Jersey.....	151	2,972	3,123
Delaware.....	37	743	780
Maryland.....	151	2,972	3,123
Virginia.....	111	2,229	2,340
North Carolina.....	74	1,486	1,560
Tennessee.....	74	1,486	1,560
Arkansas.....	37	743	780
Kentucky.....	151	2,972	3,123
Missouri.....	151	2,972	3,123
Illinois.....	225	4,458	4,683
Indiana.....	225	4,458	4,683
Ohio.....	494	9,659	10,153
Michigan.....	37	743	780
Wisconsin.....	37	743	780
Iowa.....	37	743	780
Minnesota.....	37	743	780
<hr/>			
Total.....	3,549	69,842	73,391

The rendezvous for your State will be at _____.

I have the honor to be,

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

SIMON CAMERON, *Secretary of War.*

To his Excellency _____,
Governor of _____.

Scarcely was the ink dry on the proclamation calling for troops, when the several States passed military bills, appropriating immense sums of money to arm and equip their troops. The Pennsylvania Legislature passed a bill arming the State, and appropriating \$500,000 for that purpose. New York came up to the work with a bill appropriating \$3,000,000, and arming 30,000 troops. The Connecticut State Legislature was not in session, and the banks came to the relief of her Governor. The Mechanics' Bank, of New Haven, tendered Governor Buckingham \$25,000; the Elm City Bank, \$50,000; the Fairfield

County Bank, \$50,000; a private gentleman, \$50,000; and the Thames Bank, \$100,000. At Concord, New Hampshire, the Union Bank tendered \$20,000, and each officer of the bank contributed \$100 toward the support of the families of volunteers. Massachusetts immediately called her troops into the field, and started them off to Washington. Governor Sprague, of Rhode Island, equipped one thousand troops, and commanded them himself. The Legislature appropriated \$500,000 for military purposes, and paid each of her volunteers twelve dollars per month, in advance. The banks tendered the State \$235,000. From the above, it will be seen that the people were willing to risk everything for the honor, integrity and safety of their cherished government.

The following dispatches were received by the Secretary of War, in answer to the demand for troops :—

RALEIGH, April 15, 1861.

HON. SIMON CAMERON, Secretary of War:

Your dispatch is received, and, if genuine, which its extraordinary character leads me to doubt, I have to say in reply, that I regard the levy of troops made by the Administration, for the purpose of subjugating the States of the South, as in violation of the Constitution, and a usurpation of power. I can be no party to this wicked violation of the laws of the country, and to this war upon the liberties of a free people. You can get no troops from North Carolina. I will reply more in detail when your call is received by mail.

JOHN W. ELLIS, *Governor of North Carolina.*

FRANKFORT, April 16, 1861.

HON. SIMON CAMERON, Secretary of War:

Your dispatch is received. In answer, I say emphatically, that Kentucky will furnish no troops for the wicked purpose of subduing her sister Southern States.

B. MAGOFFIN, *Governor of Kentucky.*

Governor Jackson, of Missouri, answered the Secretary of War that "His requisition was illegal, unconstitutional, revo-

lutionary, diabolical, and cannot be complied with." Governor Harris, of Tennessee, replied he would not furnish troops for "coercion." While the Hon. John Bell, of the same State, who had been the Union candidate at the late Presidential election, recommended the people to maintain a position of independence toward both North and South.

The South was already armed, with thousands of men in the field, a feat she accomplished while the North was quietly looking to the Federal Government to place itself in a state of defense. But the people were, nevertheless, ready in heart, and it required but little drilling to make them good soldiers. The two sections were now in a position for war, and bloody and perilous days were looked forward to with sad forebodings; but no fears as to the success of the war for the Union.

CHAPTER XIV.

DESTRUCTION OF NORFOLK NAVY YARD AND HARPER'S
FERRY ARMORY.

The day following the proclamation of President Lincoln, Tuesday, 16th of April, the Ringgold Flying Artillery, of Reading, Pennsylvania, Captain James McKnight, with one hundred and eighty men and four field-pieces, were on their way to Washington; being the first troops in the field under the call of the President.

The Convention of the State of Virginia had passed, in secret session, an Ordinance of Secession, and pledged herself to the Southern Confederacy. To this act, however, the western portion of the State refused to consent, and the citizens called a Convention to meet at Wheeling, and organize a separate State Government, and apply for admission as such into the Federal Union. Her people were loyal and patriotic, and when the Convention assembled, thirty-six counties were represented. After pursuing a calm and deliberate course, giving the people time to think and act with care and prudence, a Provisional Government was established, and recognized by the Administration. She also sent into the field many of her brave sons to defend the Union their forefathers had assisted to establish.

On the 17th of April, Governor Letcher, of Virginia, issued the following proclamation:—

BY THE GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA.

A PROCLAMATION.

RICHMOND, VA.

Whereas, Seven of the States formerly composing a part of the United States, have, by authority of their people, solemnly

resumed the powers granted by them to the United States, and have framed a Constitution and organized a Government for themselves, to which the people of those States are yielding willing obedience, and have so notified the President of the United States by all formalities incident to such action, and thereby become to the United States a separate, independent, and foreign power.

And, whereas, The Constitution of the United States has invested Congress with the sole power to declare war, and until such declaration is made, the President has no authority to call for an extraordinary force to wage offensive war against any foreign power; *and, whereas,* on the 15th inst., the President of the United States, in plain violation of the Constitution, issued a proclamation calling for a force of seventy-five thousand men, to cause the laws of the United States to be duly executed over a people who are no longer a part of the Union, and in said proclamation threatens to exert this unusual force to compel obedience to his mandates; *and, whereas,* the General Assembly of Virginia, by a majority approaching to entire unanimity, declared at its last session that the State of Virginia would consider such an exertion of force as a virtual declaration of war, to be resisted by all the power at the command of Virginia; and, subsequently, the Convention now in session, representing the sovereignty of this State, has re-affirmed in substance the same policy, with almost equal unanimity; *and, whereas,* the State of Virginia deeply sympathizes with the Southern States in the wrongs they have suffered, and in the position they have assumed; and having made earnest efforts peaceably to compose the differences which have severed the Union, and having failed in that attempt, through this unwarranted act on the part of the President; and it is believed that the influences which operate to produce this proclamation against the seceded States, will be brought to bear upon this Commonwealth, if she should exercise her undoubted right to resume the powers granted by her people, and it is due to the honor of Virginia that an improper exercise of force against her people should be repelled: Therefore, I, John Letcher, Governor of the Commonwealth of Virginia, have thought proper to order all armed volunteer regiments or companies within this State forthwith to hold themselves in readiness for immediate orders, and upon the reception of this proclamation



MAJ. GEN. PUTLER



GEN. ANDERSON



MAJ. GEN. HALLECK



MAJ. GEN. FREMONT



MAJ. GEN. WOOL

to report to the Adjutant-General of the State their organization and numbers, and prepare themselves for efficient service. Such companies as are not armed and equipped will report that fact, that they may be properly supplied.

In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand, and caused the seal of the Commonwealth to be affixed, this 17th day of April, 1861, and in the eighty-fifth year of the Commonwealth.

JOHN LETCHER.

The militia of the eastern portion of the State of Virginia began to assemble, under the proclamation of Governor Letcher, and preparations were making to seize several important points in the State. At Harper's Ferry the Government had an extensive armory, in which about two hundred and fifty operatives were constantly employed. The Arsenal at this place usually contained from eighty to one hundred thousand stand of arms, and to obtain these the Governor was extremely anxious. On the 18th of April, Lieutenant Jones, of the United States army, was in command of the place, with forty-three men. Fearing he would be surrounded, and all means of escape cut off, and not being able to successfully defend his position, he destroyed the munitions of war, burnt the Arsenal and work-shops, with fifteen thousand stand of arms, and retreated into Pennsylvania. Shortly after he had abandoned the place, it was occupied by the Virginia militia.

A strong effort had been made to force Maryland from the Federal Union, but every attempt had failed. Now that the Federal Capitol was in danger, it was necessary that troops should pass through Baltimore, as the shortest and most speedy route to reach the desired point. The Massachusetts Sixth Regiment, and a Pennsylvania Regiment, unarmed and without uniforms, were the first regiments in the field, and on their way to Washington.

At 3 o'clock on Friday morning, the Massachusetts Volun-

teers and the Pennsylvania Regiment, under Col. Small, left the depot, at Broad and Prime streets, Philadelphia, in thirty-six cars, for Baltimore, at which place they arrived safely at half past 10 o'clock, without any detention. A large crowd had assembled, evidently to give them an unwelcome reception. The arrangements contemplated the passage of thirty-six cars, occupied by the volunteers, from President street depot to the Camden station of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, over the intervening space occupied by the President street track.

The cars were dispatched one after the other by horses, and upon the arrival of the first car at the intersection of Gay and Pratt streets, a vast assemblage having collected there, demonstrations were made which evidently contemplated the stopping of the troops at that point. Just there repairs of the road were in progress, and a number of paving stones were lying in heaps, which were seized by the crowd and used for purposes of assault.

Ten of the cars containing the Massachusetts volunteers had succeeded in passing on their way before the crowd were able to accomplish their purpose of barricading the track, which they now began to effect by placing large heavy anchors lying in the vicinity directly across the rails. Some seven or eight were borne by the crowd and laid on the track, and thus the passage of the cars was effectually interrupted.

Having accomplished this object, the crowd set to lustily cheering for the South, for Jefferson Davis, South Carolina and secession, and groans for sundry obnoxious parties. In the meanwhile, the troops thus delayed at the depot remained quietly in the cars, until tired of their inaction, and apprehending a more formidable demonstration, they came to the conclusion to face the music and march through the city.

They accordingly evacuated the cars, and rapidly gathering on the street north of the depot, formed in line, and prepared

to make the attempt. The word was given to "march," and the head of the line had advanced some fifteen paces, when it was driven back upon the main body by the immense crowd, still further increased by a body of men who marched down to the depot, bearing at their head a Confederate flag.

Eight of the cars started from the President street depot, and passed safely to the Camden station. The ninth started, but soon returned, the track having been torn up and obstructed at the corner of Pratt and Gay streets.

After considerable delay it was determined to make the attempt to march the troops through the city. There were then the contents of twenty-two cars, only sixty of the troops were supplied with arms. The remainder were recruits, and occupied second-class and baggage cars.

Just before the movement was made from the cars, a large crowd of persons went down President street with a Southern flag, and met the troops as they emerged from the cars. The Southern flag was then carried in front of the column, and the hooting and yelling began, and as soon as they turned out of Canton avenue, they were greeted with a volley of stones.

At the corner of Fawn street two of the soldiers were struck with stones and knocked down; one of them was taken by the police to the drug store of T. J. Pilt, at the corner of Pratt and High streets, and the other to the Eastern Police Station.

The yelling continued, and the stones flew thick and fast. At Pratt street bridge a gun was fired, said to have been fired from the ranks of the soldiers. Then the crowd pressed stronger, until the body reached the corner of Gay street, where the troops presented arms and fired. Several persons fell on the first round, and the crowd became furious. A number of revolvers were used, and their shots took effect in the ranks.

People then ran in every direction in search of arms, but

the armories of the military companies of the city were closely guarded, and none could be obtained. The firing continued from Frederick street to South street in quick succession.

At the corner of Howard and Dover streets, the troops in the cars fired a volley at the citizens on the corner, and several were wounded, but their names could not be ascertained. The troops embarked at the Camden station, and the crowd, many thousands in number, set out in a run along the railroad track of the Washington branch, obstructing the track as they went with great logs and blocks of marble. The police followed, removing the obstructions.

When it was ascertained the train would start for Washington with the Massachusetts regiment, a crowd started at a full run, to obstruct the road. Their purpose, however, was not accomplished, and the train departed at one o'clock in the afternoon, and reached Washington in safety.

Colonel Small's regiment remained in the cars, but were assaulted and roughly treated. Being unarmed, and without uniforms, several made their escape into the city, and passed out unrecognized: the remainder were compelled to return to Philadelphia, where they were afterward regularly armed and equipped, and again set out for the seat of war, under more auspicious circumstances.

The following correspondence took place on the day after the riot, between the Governor of Massachusetts and the Mayor of Baltimore:

BALTIMORE, April 20, 1861.

HON. JOHN A. ANDREW, Governor of Massachusetts:

SIR:—No one deplotes the sad events of yesterday, in this city, more deeply than myself, but they were inevitable. Our people viewed the passage of armed troops to another State through the streets, as an invasion of our soil, and could not be restrained. The authorities exerted themselves to the best of their ability, but with only partial success. Governor Hicks

was present, and concurs in all my views as to the proceedings now necessary for our protection.

When are these scenes to cease? Are we to have a war of sections? God forbid! The bodies of the Massachusetts soldiers could not be sent to Boston, as you requested. All communication between this city and Philadelphia, by railroad, and Boston, by steamers, having ceased; but they have been placed in cemented coffins, and will be placed, with proper funeral ceremonies, in the mausoleum of Green Mount Cemetery, where they shall be retained until further directions are received from you. The wounded are tenderly cared for. I appreciate your offer, but Baltimore will claim it as her right to pay all expenses incurred.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. M. BROWN, *Mayor of Baltimore.*

ANSWER OF GOVERNOR ANDREW.

TO GEORGE M. BROWN, Mayor of Baltimore:

DEAR SIR:—I appreciate your kind attention to our wounded and to our dead, and trust that at the earliest moment the remains of our fallen will be returned to us. I am overwhelmed with surprise, that the peaceful march of American citizens over the common highway, to the defense of our common capitol, should be deemed aggressive to Baltimoreans. Through New York the march was triumphal.

JOHN A. ANDREW, *Governor of Massachusetts.*

Immediately following this attack on the troops, the railroad bridges near Baltimore were burned, and all railroad communication with the city cut off. Threats were made upon Fort McHenry, but the commander gave the mob to understand that the guns would be leveled against the city, and a few days after, it was strongly reinforced. The city was cut off from all business connections with other parts of the country, and her merchants and mechanics felt the pressure, and a strong reaction immediately took place.

On the 26th of April, seven days after the attack on the Massachusetts troops, the Stars and Stripes were again waving

over Butcher's Hill. A grand Union meeting was held on the 29th, and mail communication was established by water, to Perryville, in Pennsylvania.

The subject was brought before the State Legislature, and a committee was appointed, who, on the 2d of May, reported the following resolution, which was passed :

Resolved, That Otho Scott, Robert M. McLane and William G. Ross be and they are hereby appointed as Commissioners on the part of the State of Maryland, to communicate immediately, in person, with the President of the United States, in regard to the present, and any proposed military use or occupation of the soil and property of the State by the General Government, and they are directed to ascertain and report to the General Assembly forthwith, for its consideration, whether any becoming arrangement with the General Government be practicable, in that connection, for the maintenance of the peace and honor of the State, and the security of its inhabitants.

On the 7th of May the committee reported favorably on the resolution, having had a long and satisfactory interview with the President and Cabinet, and on the 9th the United States troops were passing through the City of Baltimore, and Maryland was saved from the fangs of secessionism.

The Government obtained information that preparations were making in Virginia to seize Fortress Monroe, and the Gosport Navy Yard, at Norfolk. Seven hundred men from Fall River were sent to reinforce the fort, after which it was considered safe. But the navy yard shared a worse fate. A powerful force of Virginia militia were collecting at Norfolk, and the Government was unable to reinforce the place. It was evident, from the hurrying to and fro of the State troops, that some important movement was about to take place. It was rumored that the Cumberland was about to sail, and preparations were made to prevent her departure.

At 12 o'clock an officer from the yard, bearing a flag of

truce, was conducted to General Taliaferro's head quarters, at the Atlantic Hotel, where a consultation was held, which resulted in a promise from the commandant of the yard, Commodore Macaulay, that none of the vessels should be removed, nor a shot fired, except in self-defense. This quieted the excitement, but it was renewed at a later hour, when it was ascertained that the Germantown and Merrimac had been scuttled, and that the heavy shears on the wharf at which the Germantown was lying had been cut away, and allowed to fall midships across her decks, carrying away the main top-masts and yards.

It was also perceived that the men were busily engaged in destroying and throwing overboard side and small arms, &c., and other property, and boats were seen constantly passing between the Pennsylvania, Cumberland, and other vessels. The assurance of the Commodore, given by his officer at the truce interview, however, tendered to allay the apprehension of an immediate collision. But the continued stirring movements at the yard, soon rendered it certain that it was the intention of Macauley to destroy all the buildings and other property there—and it was, therefore, with not much surprise that about midnight, after two or three slight explosions, the light of a serious conflagration was observed at the yard.

This continued to increase, and before daylight the work of destruction was extended to the immense ship-houses known as A and B, (the former containing the entire frame of the New York, 74, which had been on the stocks, unfinished, for some thirty-eight years,) and, also, to the long ranges of two-story offices and stores on each side of the main gate of the yard. The flames and heat from this tremendous mass of burning material, was set by a south-west wind directly towards the line of vessels moored on the edge of the channel opposite the yard, and nearly all of these, too, were speedily enveloped in flames.

The scene at this time was grand and terrific beyond description. The roar of the conflagration was loud enough to be heard at three or four miles distance—and to this were added occasional discharges from the heavy guns of the Pennsylvania ship-of-the-line, as they became successively heated. These guns, it is asserted, were double-shotted and directed at different parts of the yard, for the purpose of insuring its complete demolishment. This, however, is certain, that if all her guns had been thus prepared and directed, the “burnt district” could not have been more completely cleared of appurtenances.

As soon as the torch had been successfully applied to the ship-houses, the Pawnee, which had been kept under steam from the moment of her arrival, about nightfall on Saturday, was put in motion, and, taking the Cumberland in tow, retreated down the harbor out of the reach of danger.

The following is a list of the vessels of war destroyed, when and where built, tonnage and rate of guns:—

Names.	When and where built.	Tonnage.	Guns.
Pennsylvania.....	Philadelphia, 1837,	3,241	120
Columbus.....	Washington, 1819,	2,480	80
Delaware.....	Gosport, 1820,	2,633	80
New York.....	On the stocks,	2,683	84
United States.....	Philadelphia, 1797,	1,607	50
Columbia.....	Norfolk, 1836,	1,726	50
Raritan.....	Philadelphia, 1843,	1,726	50
Merrimac.....	Charlestown, 1855,	3,200	40
Plymouth.....	Charleston, 1843,	989	22
Germantown.....	Philadelphia, 1846,	989	22
Dolphin.....	Brooklyn, N.Y., 1836,	224	4
Total		21,398	602

A portion of the guns in the yard were spiked, but the spikes were easily removed by the State troops, and the amount of cannon thus secured by the State was very large, and was afterward served against the Federal Government.

CHAPTER XV.

OCCUPATION OF VIRGINIA, AND DEATH OF COLONEL ELLSWORTH.

During the difficulties at Baltimore, the Government sent its forces to Annapolis, Maryland, and though there was some opposition made by the citizens of the town, no acts of violence occurred. The railroad leading to Annapolis Junction was taken charge of by the military, and the Federal Government proclaimed it a military road. The rolling stock was taken in charge, to be used for the transportation of troops. In the railroad depot a locomotive was found, but it was so injured as to be useless. A call was immediately made on the troops for machinists, an engineer and fireman, when a score or more of these professions stepped forward from the ranks, and proceeded to the depot. One of the machinists, on looking at the locomotive, claimed it as an old acquaintance, he having been foreman of the shop in which it was constructed.

This shows the mechanical ability of the army, ready at all times to build railroads, bridges, locomotives, and cars, in fact make their own shoes, clothing, and hats, build towns, and open and cultivate farms, establish courts of law, with judges and lawyers from their ranks. Every branch and profession in life had its representative—from the classical scholar, with his diploma of Bachelor of Arts, down to the uneducated and illiterate—side by side they marched, the millionaire with his princely income, and the penniless man who from day to day labored for the bread to feed his children. Together they messed—together they sung their songs of home, and together

told their stories of loved-ones left behind. Democrat, Republican, Whig, and Union party man shoulder to shoulder—all party distinctions buried, all political animosities banished—marched steadily and firmly to the defense and protection of the Union.

In a few days after the occupation of Annapolis, the railroad was repaired, and the troops began to arrive in Washington.

A strong effort was again made to drag the State of Maryland from the Union, but the loyal men in the House of Delegates stood firmly to the contest. On the 30th of April a vote was taken on an Ordinance of Secession, and it was defeated in the House of Delegates, by a vote of 13 yeas, to 53 nays. This was a Union triumph, and Maryland was declared safe.

The Administration became satisfied that the war would be of longer duration than three months, and that it was necessary to call out troops for a more extended term of service. On the 3d of May the President issued a proclamation, calling for forty-two thousand and thirty-four volunteers, for a term of three years, unless sooner discharged. The regulars were also increased, by the addition of ten regiments, making an aggregate of twenty-two thousand seven hundred and fourteen officers and men. The Navy was increased, by an order to enlist eighteen thousand seamen for not less than one nor more than three years.

The army spread out from Washington, and on the 5th of May took possession of the Relay House, on the Baltimore and Washington Railroad, a short distance from Baltimore. This place was fortified, and the railroad well guarded. Detachments of troops were collected at this point, and on the 13th of May they were moved into Baltimore, under the command of General Butler. They took possession of Federal Hill, erected their camps, and fortified their position.

The secessionists in the State of Missouri, with the Governor, Claiborne Jackson, at their head, were deeply engaged plotting and manœuvring to force that State from the Union. They had established a camp on the outskirts of the city of St. Louis, which was under the command of General Frost. At this time General Harney was in command of the Western Division of the army. An order was issued to Captain Lyon, of the Second Infantry, to break up the camp. Taking about one thousand men, he surrounded the secessionists, and, without firing a gun, they surrendered; six hundred and twenty-nine men, with all their arms and ammunition. Immediately after the capture of the camp, and while the secession troops were passing between two files of the Federal soldiers, the latter were assaulted with stones, when they fired on the mob and killed several persons. When the troops marched into the city, they were again assaulted, and again fired on the mob, killing twenty-two persons and wounding many. From this time Missouri became the seat of a fierce and bloody war, and the theatre of several severe battles.

An order for the blockade of the Southern ports had been issued, and on the 11th of May, the United States steam frigate Niagara took her station off Charleston harbor, South Carolina. A proclamation had been issued by the Southern Confederacy, granting letters of marque and reprisal, and the fitting out of privateers. It was now a question with the Federal Government, in what light the European powers would view the war. By a treaty, these powers were prevented from using the privateering system of war. At the time it was abolished, the United States were invited to enter the treaty, the then ruling Administration declined. The Lincoln Administration, desirous of placing itself and the country on a sure footing, made a tender of acceptance of the

terms of the treaty ; but the Government was informed it was too late, they could not enter the compact. It was expected that England and France would regard the issue in the United States as a rebellion, and forbid the privateers under the Confederate flag from entering their ports. But the people were surprised when the Queen's proclamation was received, regarding the Southern Confederacy as a belligerent power. It forbid any of the Queen's subjects from entering the service of either party, or breaking a blockade, lawfully and effectually established. This was the first intimation the Administration had of the hostility of England toward the Northern States. It was expected from the position she had taken on the slavery question, and the utter abhorrence with which she pretended to regard the subject, that she would at least have acted kindly toward the section fighting to preserve their Government, their free institutions, and curb the extension of human slavery. She had, perhaps, forgotten the reception into her dominions of Fred. Douglass, the fugitive slave, and the pampering and feasting of the most violent and bitter opposers of slavery who visited her shores.

France, however, declared that, by an old law, privateers could enter her ports, but not remain over twenty-four hours, nor have their claims to prizes adjusted or sold. Of France there was but little expected, as it was well known that her Emperor always closely watched the tide of affairs, taking care he did not plunge so deeply into the stream, that he could not reach an eddy from whence he could change his course to suit the most advantageous circumstances.

But so feeble were the efforts of the Southern Confederacy to establish a privateer navy, that a few blows from the United States cruisers crushed it out of existence. To add to the disgrace of the Southern Confederacy, and legally and lawfully, so far as it was concerned, establish its pilfering propen-

sities, the Confederate Congress passed a law that the citizens of the Confederate Government, who owed debts to Northern creditors, should not pay them to the creditor, but the amount should be paid into the Confederate treasury. This was dishonoring her citizens, destroying their integrity and credit, and damning herself in the estimation of honest men as a tyrannical and pilfering usurper.

The Confederate troops had been for some weeks collecting in Virginia, occupying Alexandria, and other points along the Potomac, but not venturing sufficiently near Washington to endanger it from their guns. Arlington Heights, on the west bank of the river, overlooked Washington, and if fortified by the enemy could have demolished the city. For some time fears were entertained that they would seize this point, and quickly fortify it. But a strict watch was kept on their movements until the Union army was ready to move. At length it was announced that the troops were sufficiently drilled, equipped and organized to advance toward the enemy. When it was whispered about that preparations were making, there was joy in the camps, and the soldiers, young in arms, and filled with enthusiasm, panted to be on the march to meet the foe.

May the 24th, 1861, was a memorable day in two respects; first, it was the day when the first advance of the Federal army was made into Virginia; second, it was the day on which Colonel Elmore Ellsworth was killed in Alexandria, being the first victim of the war in that State.

The troops occupying Washington received orders on the 22d of May, to hold themselves in readiness to march at a moment's notice. Ammunition was furnished, and every preparation made for a conflict. Nothing definite, however, was known as to their destination.

About ten o'clock on the night of the 23d, four companies of picked men moved over the Long Bridge as an advanced

guard. They were sent to reconnoitre, and if assailed were to signal, when they would have been reinforced by a corps of regular infantry and a battery. The Washington City National Rifles, Captain Smead, remained at the terminus until between one and two in the morning, acting as an advanced guard. These were followed by other district volunteer companies, acting in a similar capacity.

At midnight the infantry, regiment, artillery and cavalry corps began to muster and assume marching order. As fast as several regiments were ready they proceeded to the Long Bridge, those in Washington being directed to take that route. The troops quartered at Georgetown, the Sixty-ninth, Fifth, Eighth and Twenty-eighth New York Regiments, proceeded across the Chain Bridge, under the command of Gen. McDowell. The imposing scene was at the bridge, where the main body of the troops crossed. Eight thousand infantry, two regular cavalry companies, and two sections of Sherman's artillery battalion, consisting of two batteries, were in line on the Washington side of the Long Bridge at two o'clock.

The Twelfth New York was the first on the ground. The army crossed the bridge in the following order:—Twelfth Regiment, New York; Twenty-fifth Regiment, New York; First Regiment, Michigan; First, Second, Third and Fourth New Jersey, in order named. Two regular cavalry corps, of eighty men each, and Sherman's two batteries; next, and last, came the New York Seventh. Following these was a long train of wagons, filled with wheelbarrows, shovels, &c. Altogether, there were at least thirteen thousand men in the advancing army.

Major-General Mansfield commanded the movement of the troops until the last corps left the district. The first regiment of the main body that crossed the Long Bridge started at

twenty minutes past two, and the last corps left the district at about quarter to four o'clock.

The army could not have had a more beautiful night for their march. The atmosphere was balmy, and the moon never shone more clear. The only civilian allowed to cross the Long Bridge was Senator Chandler, of Michigan. So little noise did they cause that few of the citizens of Washington were awakened from their slumbers.

The scene at the bridge was grand and impressive beyond description. The night was cool and clear, thousands of men were drawn up in line and defiling past, but not a whisper was heard from them. They all preserved a solemn silence, as though sensible of the momentousness of the occasion, but the rumble of artillery, the clatter of cavalry, the muskets and ordnance glittering in the moonlight, the suppressed commands of the officers imparted, nevertheless, a liveliness to the imposing spectacle.

At four o'clock, A. M., Major General Sandford and staff left Willard's, and proceeded to Virginia to take command of the advancing forces.

While the above troops were moving along the west bank of the river, Colonel Ellsworth's Fire Zouaves were preparing to march against Alexandria. It was conjectured that the Confederate forces would make a stand at that point, and a battle would follow.

The Zouaves embarked on board the steamers Baltimore and Mount Vernon, before daylight, and at 5 A. M. reached Alexandria, in good order. Just before reaching the wharf, the commander of the Pawnee sent a flag of truce to the rebel forces, giving them one hour in which to withdraw from the town. The Major commanding the Virginia troops refused the demand. The Captain then informed him that the consequences would be terrible to the village and all its inhabitants,

and prolonged the time till 8 o'clock. At 6 A. M. Ellsworth's Zouaves landed and took a position on the dock. Company E, Captain Leverich, first disembarked, and was at once detailed to destroy the railroad track leading to Richmond, which service they promptly performed.

The troops were accompanied by two guns from Sherman's Battery of Flying Artillery, and a company of United States Cavalry. As they marched into the street, a whistle saluted them, and a train of cars steamed away, probably bearing the secession forces. One company of horse, numbering forty-five, were captured, with horses, accoutrements, and flag, mounted, mounting, and preparing to mount.

Simultaneously with the landing of the Zouaves, the First Michigan Regiment entered Alexandria via the Long Bridge, and proceeded to the railroad depot, of which they took possession, capturing a troop of the cavalry, numbering one hundred, with their horses and equipments.

After detailing Company E, Colonel Ellsworth directed the Adjutant to form the regiment, and then with his Aid, Lieutenant Winsor, and a file of men, started for the telegraph office, to cut the wires. Colonel Ellsworth proceeded in double-quick time up the street. They had proceeded three blocks, when his attention was attracted by a large Secession flag flying from the Marshall House, kept by J. W. Jackson. The Colonel entered the hotel, and meeting a man in the hall, he asked, "Who put up that flag?" The man answered, "I don't know; I am a boarder here." Colonel Ellsworth, Lieutenant Winsor, the Chaplain of the regiment, Mr. House, a volunteer aid, and four privates, went up to the roof, and Colonel Ellsworth cut down the flag.

The party were returning down the stairs, preceded by private Francis E. Brownell, of Company A. As they left the attic, the man who had said he was a boarder, but who proved

to be the landlord, Jackson, was met in the hall, having a double-barreled gun, which he leveled at Brownell. Brownell struck up the gun with his musket, when Jackson pulled both triggers. The contents lodged in the body of Colonel Ellsworth, entering between the third and fifth ribs. The Colonel was at the time rolling up the flag. He fell forward on the floor of the hall, and exclaimed "My God!" He tore open his apparel, opened his wounded breast to all, then threw back his arms and expired almost instantly.

The instant that Jackson fired, Brownell leveled his musket at Jackson, and fired; the ball struck on the bridge of the nose, and crashed through his skull, killing him instantly. As he fell, Brownell followed his shot by a thrust of his bayonet, which went through and pinned the body to the floor.

The corpse of Colonel Ellsworth lay in state in Washington, where every honor and respect was paid it. The dignitaries of the city composed the funeral cortege, and the bells tolled his funeral knell. Along the entire route to his native State, the corpse was received with honor, and the homage of a sorrowing people paid to his last remains.

He was a talented and brilliant young officer, and on the road to fame and fortune. He had been the Captain of the famous Zouave Company of Chicago, Illinois, which made the tour of the principal cities of the United States before the breaking out of the war, and by their superior and excellent drill astonished the public, and obtained for themselves great notoriety. At the breaking out of the war, he proceeded to New York, and from the firemen of that city raised a regiment of soldiers. They proved to be brave and fearless men, and when the opportunity offered, they avenged the death of their young commander.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE CAPTURE OF ROMNEY AND PHILLIPPI, IN WESTERN VIRGINIA—POSITION OF THE FEDERAL ARMY.

The occupation of Virginia, by the Federal army, caused some consternation in the South. At Richmond, it was feared an immediate advance would be made on that city, and, in its unfortified condition, it would fall an easy prey to the Union troops. It was supposed by the Confederates, and that very wisely, too, that if an advance was made, it would be by the way of Manassas Junction, as that route seemed the most practicable and easy. The small settlement known on the maps as "Manassas Junction," is located immediately at the junction of the Manassas Gap Railway with the Alexandria and Orange Railroad. It is twenty-seven miles south-west of Alexandria, sixty-one miles north-east of Gordonsville, one hundred and forty-three north-east of Lynchburg, and one hundred and thirty-four miles north of Richmond.

The Manassas Gap Railroad is an uncompleted line of railway, entering into Mount Jackson, a village in Shenandoah county, one hundred and twelve miles from the Junction. From this point, communication by railroad is had with every Southern State, and therefore, for the rapid concentration of troops and munitions of war, on the northern line of the Confederates' military operations, it has proved a valuable position. It lies in a gorge of the mountains, and possesses many natural advantages. At the time the Federal troops moved into Virginia, there were at Manassas but a few Confederate soldiers. It was immediately reinforced by five thousand

men, and the erection of strong fortifications commenced. The pickets of the Confederate army extended to within a few miles of Washington, and behind them, and on to Manassas were numerous camps of troops. The extreme Southern States sent into Virginia their entire military force, presuming that State would be the seat of war. By the end of May they had, in and around Manassas, perhaps one hundred thousand men.

After the occupation of Virginia by the Federal troops, they began the erection of strong fortifications, for the protection of Washington.

The two armies occupied their time in intrenching themselves, drilling, skirmishing, and foraging. No movements of importance were made; but, like two desperate antagonists, they contented themselves with watching each other's operations. The Confederate forces were under the command of General Beauregard, an accomplished and efficient engineer. He had been an officer in the United States regular service, but when the secession movement broke out, he resigned his commission in the Federal army, and offered his services to the South, where they were willingly accepted. He is a native of Louisiana, and received his military education at the Federal Academy at West Point. Of his ability to command a large force in a fair field, not backed by impregnable intrenchments, there is great doubt. From the time of the occupation of Manassas Junction by the Confederate forces, he had been in command of the position, and under his direction the fortifications have been erected.

The Union forces were under the command of Lieutenant-General Scott, the highest officer in the Federal service, and next to the President in rank; the latter being, constitutionally, the Commander-in-Chief of all the Federal forces. The extreme age of General Scott, together with his bodily

infirmities, incapacitated him from active service in the field, but his mind was clear, and his military knowledge and skill unimpaired. He regulated the military movements of the army, and they in all cases showed the same care that has always characterized him as a general. He was a patriot, and a noble man in the fullest extent of the term. When Virginia, his native State, had seceded, he was solicited—he was persuaded and urged by the Confederates to join their unholy cause. But the good old man had fought too many battles under the Stars and Stripes, and achieved too many victories under the folds of his country's flag, to forsake it. When, on one occasion, solicited, by a committee sent from Virginia, to forsake his country, and follow the fortunes of his native State, he informed the committee that he had served for fifty years beneath the flag of his country, and he would serve under it while he lived. He was subsequently placed on the retired list, with full pay, and went to France; but when danger from abroad threatened his country, he instantly returned, that his services and his influence as a general might support her in the hour of need. He is a patriot and a soldier of whom the American people may well be proud—and when he has gone to his last resting place, his patriotism and noble deeds will live in the hearts of his countrymen—an imperishable monument to his memory.

The west bank of the lower Potomac was occupied by the Confederate troops, where they had thrown up strong fortifications. Between them and the United States steamers there were frequent skirmishes, without, however, any serious results.

By the 30th of May, Western Virginia had sent troops into the field, under the command of Colonel Kelley, a brave and able officer. These were joined by troops from Ohio, and on that day they took possession of Grafton—the Confederate forces, fifteen hundred strong, flying without making any

resistance. After the flight of the enemy, and as Colonel Kelley was marching into the town at the head of his troops, he was approached by a desperate character, who shot him in the breast with a revolver. He was not mortally wounded, and by careful attendance subsequently recovered.

The army in Western Virginia was increased by the addition of an Indiana regiment, under the command of Colonel Lewis Wallace. On the night of June 11th, his regiment marched twenty miles, through a heavy rain, attacked a Confederate encampment at Romney, and after a short engagement, in which two of the enemy were killed, they fled in the greatest confusion. The Federal troops had only one man wounded.

On June 1st, a brisk skirmish took place between Company B of the United States Cavalry, Lieutenant Tompkins commanding, and the Confederate forces, at Fairfax Court House. The company was on a reconnoitering expedition, and reached the vicinity of Fairfax, where they captured the Confederate pickets, and entered the town. The Confederate troops fired from windows and house-tops upon the cavalry. The Lieutenant charged upon the mounted riflemen and drove them from the town, and perceiving two or three companies coming to the relief of the Confederates, and being outnumbered, he charged again on the enemy, and cut his way through. He returned to the camp with his company, having sustained a loss of two killed, two wounded, and one missing. He brought away five prisoners, and two horses fully armed and equipped.

General Patterson had been ordered to the command of the army of the upper Potomac, and on the 7th of June he commenced his march from Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, toward Virginia, Brigadier-General Thomas leading the advance. The Confederate troops, under command of General Lee, occupied the west side of the Potomac, from Harper's Ferry down

to within a short distance of Washington. Hearing of the advance of the Federal troops, and fearing they would cross into Virginia, they destroyed all the bridges across the Potomac. General Patterson, however, advanced, and quietly occupied the Maryland side of the Potomac.

General McDowell was in command of the forces on the west bank of the Potomac at Washington, his head-quarters were established on Arlington Heights, at the late residence of the Confederate General Lee. General Butler was in command at Fortress Monroe, and the troops stationed at Newport News. Captain Lyon, for his military ability and the celerity of his movements, was made a Brigadier-General of Volunteers, and superseded General Harney in the command in the State of Missouri. In the State of Illinois, General Prentiss was in command, and commenced fortifying the town of Cairo, at the mouth of the Ohio river, where it empties into the Mississippi river, and the terminus of the Illinois Central Railroad. This was a very strong military position, and completely blockaded the two rivers against any of the enemy's steamers. Kentucky was still neutral, not having determined which side of the question she would take. Shortly after the above date, however, her territory was occupied by the Confederate troops, and she then, by an overwhelming majority of her citizens, declared herself loyal, and ready to stand firm to the Union.

In Western Virginia, Col. Kelley, a native of Wheeling, Virginia, commanded the troops, and moved rapidly and boldly against the Confederate forces.

On the 3d of June, (this was previous to his being wounded,) he made a descent on the Confederate forces at Phillippi, Virginia, numbering fifteen hundred, and, after a straggling fight, but of short duration, the Confederates were defeated, with a loss of sixteen killed, a number wounded, and ten prisoners. The Federal loss was two killed, and twenty-five wounded.

After Col. Kelley was disabled by being wounded at Romney, General McClellan, a native of Philadelphia, Pa., was made Brigadier-General of Volunteers, and consigned to the command of the army in Western Virginia. He was a thorough-bred soldier in every respect, having been educated at West Point, and graduated with honor to himself and his State. He was regarded by the Federal Government as a man of excellent military science and knowledge. During the existence of the Crimean war, he was appointed as one of a commission of three officers to visit the Crimea, and watch the progress of the allied armies, and report their observations to the General Government. Upon the return of the officers from Europe, General McClellan wrote a very valuable work upon the campaign of the allies in the Crimea. In Western Virginia he soon proved his military ability, by the masterly manner in which he drove the Confederate troops from point to point, defeating them at every turn.

We now have arrived at the period where the Federal army begins to take form, and establish its lines from the Atlantic to the wilds beyond Kansas, down into New Mexico. A chain of Federal troops was stationed along this immense distance, strengthening itself, and preparing to close up its links, tighten steadily and firmly upon the Confederates, until they were completely fastened in the net preparing for them.

CHAPTER XVII.

BATTLE AT GREAT BETHEL—DEATH OF LIEUTENANT GREBLE
—EVACUATION OF HARPER'S FERRY BY THE CONFEDERATE
TROOPS.

Information had been received by General Butler, who was in command at Fortress Monroe, that the Confederates were in force at a place called Great Bethel, twelve and a half miles from the fortress, on the Yorktown road. Having determined to dislodge them, he gave orders to the Ordnance Department for a battery of howitzers, which consisted of four twelve-pounders, with a detachment of United States Artillery, under the command of Lieutenant John F. Greble, of the United States army. The detailed force of volunteers consisted of three regiments—the Albany Regiment, Colonel Townsend; the New York Zouaves, led by Colonel Duryea; and the Fifth New York Regiment, Colonel Benedix; with companies of other regiments, comprising a force of nearly three thousand men.

At midnight, on Sunday, about nineteen hundred men advanced from Newport News Point, and three thousand from Old Point Comfort, with an arrangement to meet near Newmarket bridge, where they would conjoin under the command of Brigadier-General Pierce, of Mass., for the purpose of checking the incursions of a corps of Virginia dragoons who had arranged their pickets in the vicinity of Hampton.

A part of the troops from Newport News Point, mistaking the Federal troops for the Southern forces, at about 3 o'clock in the morning, opened fire on them, and killed several, besides wounding quite a number. This revealed their approach to the Confederates, and the delay caused by the



BATTLE OF CHEAT MOUNTAIN.

confusion resulting from the mistake, enabled the Confederates to thoroughly prepare for them. While on the march, Capt. A. Whiting, of Hampton, who was on picket duty, was captured.

After order was restored among the Federal troops, they advanced rapidly towards Great Bethel, unconscious of any formidable opposing force. Upon approaching the brink of the narrow creek which separated them from those lying in wait, a galling fire from two batteries, one of two, and one of four guns, opened on them, while they protected a large body of expert riflemen.

An attempt was made to storm the works; but there being no system or regularity in the movements of the troops, they were driven back. Again a mistake occurred, by an officer on the right supposing that a force on the left was the enemy, fell back, and caused a general retreat. Lieutenant Greble was killed while serving his guns, by a rifle cannon ball striking him in the head. Major Theodore Winthrop was missed immediately after the battle, and it was presumed he was a prisoner; but a few days after the defeat, his body was recovered from the Confederates. The Federal loss was thirteen killed, and thirty wounded. The Confederate force was said to be twenty-two hundred, with a loss of seventeen killed, and a number wounded. After the defeat at Great Bethel, things remained comparatively quiet at Fortress Monroe, except occasional alarms and reports of the advance of the enemy.

Upon the approach of General Patterson on the line of the Potomac, the Confederate forces evacuated Harper's Ferry, carrying away the guns they had mounted on their fortifications. On the 14th, they burned the bridge over the Potomac at Harper's Ferry, and the bridge at Martinsburg. At the former place they burned the United States armory buildings,

and at the latter place they collected forty-eight locomotives, a large amount of cars and machinery belonging to the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, and destroyed them by fire.

At noon on Thursday, a courier arrived at Harper's Ferry, with dispatches for General Johnston from Davis, at Richmond, and General Beauregard at Manassas. Instantly after reading them, General Johnston held a brief consultation with the colonels of all the regiments of his army, who were hastily summoned for that purpose. Immediately after the conference broke up, the colonels directed their several commands to prepare for instant marching. All the artillery on the Maryland Heights was brought carefully down, taken across the bridge, and put into cars for Winchester. Also, all the ammunition, cannon balls, &c.

These movements occupied all the time from three in the afternoon till daybreak the next morning, when the last gun, a rifled cannon, (one of those that had been brought from the Point of Rocks, by Colonel Johnston,) crossed the bridge. The troops on the Maryland side immediately followed, and at that moment Maryland was, for the first time, free from the presence of Southern troops. The troops being all out of the way, General Johnston gave directions for the firing of the train by which the bridge was undermined. The match was applied, a tremendous explosion followed, and in an instant the great bridge was a mass of ruins. Fire was then applied to the remaining wood-work of the structure, and it was entirely destroyed.

The troops left Harper's Ferry in three divisions, one by railroad to Winchester, the other two by two country roads to Leesburg. The number of troops that left Harper's Ferry was fully fifteen thousand.

From the time the Federal army occupied the west bank of the Potomac, up to the 17th of June, no advance had been made into the enemy's country. On that day, Brigadier-

General Schenck, acting under orders from General McDowell, started out the Alexandria, Loudon and Hampshire railroad, with six hundred troops, of the First Ohio Regiment, Colonel McCook commanding, to occupy, and, if possible, to hold the village of Vienna, situated on that road. General Schenck, in his official report, says :—

TO LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SCOTT :

We left camp with six hundred and sixty-eight, rank and file, twenty-nine field and company officers, in pursuance of General McDowell's orders, to go upon this expedition with the available force of one of my regiments; the regiment selected being the First Ohio Volunteers. We left Companies I and K, with an aggregate of one hundred and thirty-five men, at the crossing of the road. Lieutenant-Colonel Parrot, with two companies of one hundred and seventeen men, to go to Falls Church, and to patrol the roads in that direction. Stationed two companies, (D and F, one hundred and thirty-five men,) to guard the railroad bridge, between the crossing and Vienna. We proceeded slowly to Vienna, with four companies—Company E, Captain Paddock; Company C, Lieutenant Woodward, afterwards joined by Captain Pease: Company G, Captain Bailey; Company H, Captain Hazlett; being a total of two hundred and seventy-five men.

On turning the curve slowly, within a quarter of a mile of Vienna, we were fired upon by raking, masked batteries of, I think, three guns, with shell, round shot and grape, killing and wounding the men on the platform and in the cars before the train could be stopped.

When the train stopped, the engineer could not, on account of damage to some part of the running machinery, draw the train out of the fire. The engine being in the rear, we left the cars, and retired to the right and left of the train through the woods. Finding that the enemy's batteries were sustained by what appeared to be a regiment of infantry and by cavalry, which force we have since understood to have been some fifteen hundred South Carolinians, we fell back along the railroad, throwing out skirmishers on both flanks. This was about 7 P. M. Thus we retired slowly, bearing off our wounded, for five miles, to this point, which we reached at 10 o'clock.

* * * * *

When all the batteries opened upon us, Major Hughey was at his station on the foremost car. Colonel McCook was with me in one of the passenger cars. Both of these officers, with others of the commissioned officers and many of the men, behaved most coolly under this galling fire, which we could not return, and from batteries which we could not flank or turn, from the nature of the ground.

The approach to Vienna is through a deep, long cut in the railway. In leaving the cars, and before they could rally, many of my men lost haversacks and blankets, but brought off all their muskets, except, it may be, a few that were destroyed by the enemy's first fire, or lost with the killed.

ROBERT C. SCHENCK, *Brigadier General*.

The result of this engagement was the retreat of the Federal troops, with a loss of eight killed, and seven wounded.

The lines of the Confederate forces extended from Norfolk, Va., along the western bank of the lower Potomac, nearly reaching to Alexandria. Here they left the river, making a curve, by way of Manassas Junction, and again striking the Potomac a short distance above Washington, extended along the Potomac to Harper's Ferry and to Martinsburg. Through Western Virginia there was a break. The line commencing again at the northern line of Tennessee, and extending westward to Memphis, on the Mississippi river. In Missouri, they had no established points of defense, but moved as defeat or success permitted.

At Norfolk, General Magruder commanded; at Manassas and along the lower Potomac, General Beauregard; and on the upper Potomac, Generals Lee and Johnston. Along the Tennessee line, Generals Zollickoffer, Twiggs and Polk commanded. In Missouri, Generals Price and McCullough had command of the Confederate troops. In the mountains on the western border of Eastern Virginia, Generals ex-Governor Wise, Floyd and Garnet commanded.

CHAPTER XVIII.

BATTLE OF BOONVILLE—DEATH OF CAPTAIN WARD—BATTLE
OF FALLING WATERS.

After the appointment of General Lyon to the command in Missouri, the Federal troops displayed the greatest energy and rapidity in their movements. The force, however, under his command was, from some cause or another, small, and though the subject was frequently spoken of publicly, the War Department paid no attention to it. But the General made his small force work, and pursued the Confederates with surprising diligence. He determined to drive the enemy from the State if possible, and at once give safety and peace to the loyal people. He therefore made preparations to ascend the Missouri river, and attack the enemy wherever found.

Having made the necessary preparations for an expedition, the General placed his troops on board the steamers *Jaton*, *McDowell*, and *City of Louisville*, and started up the Missouri river. As the fleet were approaching Boonville, a town of some prominence on the river, on Monday, June 15th, a battery was discovered at Adams' Mill, five miles below the town. The expedition turned about, and descended the river three miles, where the troops landed, amounting to seventeen hundred strong. The line of march was taken on the Rocheport road, leading to Boonville, and when within about six miles of the town, they were met by a force of the enemy, numbering three thousand, under the command of General Price. The Confederates were posted in a thick undergrowth and in a wheat-field. The fire from this concealment was sharp and

galling to the Federal troops, and the General discovered it would be impossible to dislodge them. He then ordered a retreat, which was accomplished in good order, and had the effect to draw the enemy from their ambush. When this was effected, he turned his retreating troops, and charged the enemy with such fury, and raked them so severely with his artillery, that they fled in dismay. They were driven back three miles below Boonville, and they continued their flight through the town. About fifteen hundred stand of arms were captured, a large amount of ammunition, and a number of horses. The Federal loss was four killed and nine wounded, the loss of the Confederates was supposed to be large, but no account of it has ever been published.

At this time the Federal troops were operating in other portions of the State. The town of Independence is situated on the Missouri river, near the Kansas line; near this town a Confederate camp had sprung up, under the command of Captain Holloway. A detachment of Federal troops, under Captain Stanley, with a flag of truce, visited the camp of the Confederate troops, to ascertain the purposes of Captain Holloway.

During the conference, Stanley learned that movements were being made with a design to attack him, and ordered his detachment to retreat. While retreating, he was fired upon by the State troops at an order given by a private; but the fire was so irregular, that they killed their own commander, Capt. Holloway, and J. B. Clannahan, and severely wounded several of their own men.

Stanley's men did not fire, having received orders not to do so under any circumstances. Stanley retreated toward Kansas City, and reported the affair, when Capt. Prince, with a strong body of troops, attacked and routed the Confederate forces, capturing thirty horses and a large quantity of baggage.

On the 26th of June, thirteen of Colonel Wallace's Zouave Regiment were scouting on Patterson's creek, twelve miles from Cumberland, Maryland, where they encountered a party of Confederate troops, numbering about forty men. For the small numbers engaged, it was a bloody and desperate engagement. Colonel Wallace, in his account of the battle, says:

"CUMBERLAND, June 27th, 1861.

"TO GENERAL MCCLELLAN:—I have been accustomed to sending my mounted pickets, thirteen men in all, to different posts along the several approaches to Cumberland. Finding it next to impossible to get reliable information of the enemy, yesterday I visited the thirteen, and directed them, if possible, to get to Frankford, a town midway between this place and Romney, to see if there were any Rebel troops there.

"They went within a quarter of a mile of the place, and found it full of cavalry. Returning they overtook forty-one horsemen, and at once charged them, routing and driving them back more than a mile, killing eight of them, and securing seven horses; Corporal Hays, in command of my men, was desperately wounded with sabre cuts and bullets. Taking him back, they halted about an hour, and were then attacked by the enemy, who had been reinforced to about 75 men. The attack was so sudden that they abandoned their horses, and crossed to a small island at the mouth of Patterson's creek.

"The charge of the Rebels was bold and confident, yet twenty-three fell under the fire of my pickets, close about and on the island. My fellows were finally driven off, scattering, each man for himself, but they are all in camp now. One, Corporal Hays, of Company A, was wounded, but is recovering. One, John C. Holdingbrook, of Company B, is dead. The last was taken prisoner and brutally murdered.

"Three companies went to the ground this morning, and recovered everything belonging to my picket except a few of the horses. The enemy were engaged all night long in boxing up their dead. Two of their officers were killed, and they laid out twenty-three on the porch of a neighboring farm-house. I will bury my poor fellow to-morrow."

*The Confederate troops on the lower Potomac, had com-

menced the erection of strong batteries at every available point. Frequently the batteries erected and the United States steamers came in collision, but without any serious results. On the 27th of June, however, a more serious engagement occurred in our attack on the Confederate batteries at Mathias Point.

On Wednesday night Captain Ward sent up to the Pawnee, at Acquia Creek, desiring Captain Owens to send him a reinforcement of two boats' crews. Two small cutters, with their crews, were therefore sent down to the Freeborn, under Lieutenant Chaplin, and with them, Captain Ward dispatched a boat and crew from the Freeborn, numbering in all from thirty to forty men.

Lieutenant Chaplin effected a landing, and succeeded in driving in the Confederate pickets. Finding preparation for the erection of a Confederate battery there, it was determined to throw up breastworks and mount guns thereon, to give the enemy a warm reception should they attack the crews.

Accordingly, men were set to work, under cover of the Freeborn's guns, at throwing up sand-bag breastworks, and succeeded in working four hours and a half, getting their works completed about five o'clock in the evening.

They then went to their boats, intending to go on board of the Freeborn for guns to mount on the works, when, at the moment of embarking, they were surprised by a force of the enemy, estimated at from a thousand to fifteen hundred strong, who poured a heavy and continuous fire of musketry upon them from bushes near by.

Under cover of the Freeborn's guns, they reached the steamer, leaving a few of the men on shore, the guns of the Freeborn meanwhile opening with activity and precision, apparently, upon the enemy, who were concealed by underbrush. About ten shells were thrown among them; with what effect could not be seen, owing the enemy's position.

Captain Ward behaved with great coolness, standing by the guns and directing their fire, when a gunner received a wound in the thigh, which disabled him. Captain Ward immediately took his place, and was sighting the gun, when he received a Minnie musket ball full in the breast, which killed him almost instantly.

The men left on shore by the boats in their retreat, swam out to the Freeborn, one of them carrying on his back a wounded comrade named Bess, who had received four musket balls, and was thought mortally wounded. Jack Williams, Coxswain of the third cutter, received a flesh wound while waving the Stars and Stripes, which he had carried in his hand during the whole affair, behaving most gallantly under the hottest fire. The American ensign, which he unceasingly waved, was pierced with nineteen musket balls.

Only three men in the boats were wounded. The only life lost was that of the gallant Ward, who, the moment the enemy was discovered, blew the signal for the boat's crew to come on board, and instantly opened on the foe with his heavy guns.

The object of Captain Ward in throwing up the breastworks at Mathias Point was, that his boat's crew might be able to hold the place with the aid of a small howitzer battery, and covered by the thirty-two-pounder guns of the Freeborn, until his force should be reinforced by the New York Seventy-first Regiment, which he had sent for to come to his support. It was thought that the regiment, once there, could fortify themselves and hold the place against a force vastly superior to their number. The Pawnee, however, arrived at the Navy Yard with Ward's corpse before the dispatch reached the Seventy-first.

General Patterson, who had for some time quietly occupied the upper Potomac, determined to carry the war into the enemy's country. He divided his force into three columns,

and on the morning of July 2d, they were prepared to march. A little before four o'clock the regular crossing commenced in the following order:—Wisconsin Regiment, Perkins' Battery, Eleventh Pennsylvania Regiment, Twenty-third, Sixth, Twenty-first, Ninth, Sixteenth, Twenty-fourth, Twentieth, Seventh, Tenth, First, Second, Third, Fourteenth, Fifteenth; Col. Thomas' Cavalry, the Philadelphia City Troop, and the Rhode Island Battery, which came in the previous evening, crossed during the passage of the regiments. A short distance from the river the advance came upon the enemy, under the command of Col. Jackson.

The battle commenced a mile beyond Falling Waters, at nine o'clock in the morning. The commencement was sudden, and without any previous knowledge that it was at hand. Col. Perkins had rode out some distance in front of his battery, and upon turning a bend of the road, suddenly found himself face to face with two strange officers, mounted. They made the military salute, and shook hands cordially with the Colonel, asking him what company he belonged to? He answered, company C. Just then one of the officers espied the battery coming round the bend, and exclaimed, "Artillery, by God!" both put spurs to their horses and left. Colonel Perkins shouted, "now, boys, we've got 'em!" and in less than a minute the battery opened hot and heavy, right and left of the road. The Wisconsin Regiment was supporting the battery on the left of the road, and the Pennsylvania Eleventh on the right. These immediately came up in position, and poured in one volley before the enemy had time to form; and, in fact, they never formed, but fought guerilla style during the whole action.

This was done probably to cover the retreat of the main body of their forces. Just in the middle of the fight the Twenty-third Regiment came up and took part in the chase,

flanking out to a considerable distance to the left, and routing the Confederates from all their places of concealment. McMullin's men lay along the road near the battery, and in the woods, fighting Indian fashion. Every man was cool and deliberate, and their shots told with fearful effect.

The cavalry of the Confederates attempted to make two charges upon the Eleventh, but were broken and fled each time. The pursuit was continued over three miles, and only ceased when the men became tired of trotting double-quick, and loading and firing in the hot sun.

The Confederate camp was captured, with all its appurtenances. General Patterson's forces occupied the Virginia bank of the Potomac, until after the battle of Bull's Run, when he re-crossed the river, and took a position in Maryland.

On the 3d of July, a small detachment of Illinois troops, numbering about six hundred, were encamped near Monroe, Missouri, under the command of Colonel Smith. General Harris commanded the Confederates, amounting to sixteen hundred men. The attack upon the Federal troops was bold and severe, but they stood firmly to the work, and the Confederates retreated, with a loss of four killed, and a number wounded. They retreated to Monroe, where they again made fight, and were followed by the Federal forces, who attacked and drove them from the town. Colonel Smith took a position in the Academy Buildings, and was soon after surrounded by sixteen hundred Confederate cavalry. He held out until reinforcements from Quincy, Illinois, reached him, when the enemy were attacked in the rear, and completely routed, with a loss of thirty killed, seventy-five prisoners, and several horses captured.

CHAPTER XIX.

MEETING OF THE EXTRA SESSION OF CONGRESS—BATTLE OF
CARTHAGE—BATTLE OF RICH MOUNTAIN—BATTLE OF
CHEAT MOUNTAIN, AND DEATH OF GENERAL GARNET.

The extra session of Congress, convened by the proclamation of the President, commenced at Washington on the 4th of July, 1861. Great unanimity prevailed among the members, and there was a desire and a determination to take hold of the business of the nation, and push it forward with all possible speed. The organization was effected without the usual delay, caused by politicians squabbling and quarreling about nice points of politics, and strict party lines. Galusha A. Grow, of Pennsylvania, was elected Speaker of the House, and Emerson Etheridge, of Tennessee, Clerk. This latter election had a two-fold significance; it proved—first, that the Republican party, which was strongly in the majority, were not opposed to good and loyal men from the Southern States occupying positions of trust and profit within their power to give; and, secondly, that the election of a President, exclusively by the North, was no indication that every position in the administration of the Government was to be confined exclusively to men of Republican proclivities, and living north of Mason and Dixon's line.

The President's message was looked for with more than usual interest at this time, as some conjectures had been formed as to the stupendous measures it would propose to Congress. Immediately after Congress had organized, the message was laid before that body, and as quick as lightning

could send it, it was flashed from one end of the country to the other. The people read it with avidity, smiled at its vast propositions, and concluded the President was right, and by their support and assistance they would convince him of the fact. Four hundred thousand men, and five hundred millions of dollars were asked for to carry on the war. The subject was referred by Congress to its proper committees, and in a few days bills were presented and passed, appropriating six hundred millions of dollars, and authorizing the enlistment of five hundred thousand men. Again the people said right; the war must be prosecuted with vigor. A national tax was to be levied; no man complained; the Government must have money. Those who remained at home from the war, thrust their hands in their pockets, and, whistling "Yankee Doodle," went cheerfully about their respective avocations. Every confidence was placed in the Administration, and by loyal men no obstacle was placed in its way, and no rights or powers denied it. If, for a single moment, it was suggested that the President, or the Secretary of State, had overstepped the strict bounds of law or constitutional power, it was supposed necessity demanded it, and it was all right. The Cabinet were united, and so peaceably did they work together in their efforts to remove the difficulties that surrounded them, that it created in the minds of the people a firm reliance in their ability to unsift, and clearly develop the power and resources of the Government.

When the six hundred millions of dollars were appropriated, all eyes were turned toward Europe, as the only source from whence the funds could be obtained. England quickly declared that no money should be borrowed in her markets, while France remained comparatively quiet. The brokers and money-lenders of the latter nation were willing, however, to advance on United States bonds, if the United States would

humbly beseech her aid. But it was not necessary to use foreign gold to quell a home insurrection. It was an American war—American people were fighting it, and American gold must carry it on. There was a breathless stillness for a few weeks, an anxious wondering who would be asked to loan the United States six hundred millions of dollars. At length, Mr. Chase, Secretary of the Treasury, relieved the suspense. The banks of the three cities—New York, Philadelphia, and Boston—had taken one hundred and fifty millions of the loan. A people's loan was established, where every person who had five dollars to spare could loan it to the Government. This announcement was hailed with delight, and when the loan offices were opened, old and young, male and female, rich and poor, contributed to the support of the Government. Foreign nations were astounded at the patriotism of the people, and the unlimited confidence they reposed in their Government.

General Lyon had followed his success at Boonville closely, and in a short time had driven the Confederates into the southwestern part of the State of Missouri. He was endeavoring to establish a line of defenses, so as to hold them in check until he was fully prepared to drive them from that State into the State of Arkansas.

Colonel Seigel had been left about seven miles below Carthage, with a force of fifteen hundred Federal troops. The Confederates, ascertaining the position of the Colonel, broke up their camp on Wednesday, July 3d, and started in the direction of Carthage. They numbered about six thousand men, under the command of General Rains, and Governor Jackson. On Friday morning, the 5th, they came in the neighborhood of Colonel Seigel. Knowing the enemy outnumbered him, but relying on the bravery of his troops, the gallant Colonel advanced to the attack. He readily perceived, too, that their object was to cut off his retreat from the main

body of the army, or drive him into a position where he would be compelled to surrender.

The Confederate troops were posted on an eminence in the prairie, with five pieces of artillery—one twelve-pounder in the centre, and two six-pounders on the right and left; cavalry on each flank, and the infantry in the rear of the artillery. Colonel Seigel approached within 800 yards, with four cannon in the centre, a body of infantry and a six-pounder under Lieutenant-Colonel Hassendard on the left, Colonel Solomon's command with a six-pounder on the right, and a body of infantry behind the centre artillery.

Colonel Seigel's left opened fire with shrapnell, and soon the engagement became general. The Confederates had no grape, and the artillerists being poor, their balls went over the heads of the Federal troops. After two hours' firing, the enemy's artillery was entirely silenced, and their ranks broken. About one hundred and fifty Confederate cavalry then attempted to outflank Seigel, and cut off his baggage train, which was three miles back, when a retrograde movement was ordered, and the train was reached in good order.

The wagons were then surrounded by the infantry and artillery, and the retreat continued till a point was reached where the road passed through a high bluff on each side, where the enemy's cavalry were posted in large numbers by a feint, as if intending to pass around the bluff. Seigel threw his artillery into a solid body into the road, at a distance of one hundred and fifty yards from his position, when, by a rapid movement of his artillery, he poured a heavy cross-fire of canister into their ranks, and at the same time the infantry charged at double-quick time. In ten minutes the Confederate forces scattered in every direction. Eighty-five riderless horses were captured, sixty-five shot-guns, and a number of revolvers and bowie-knives were picked up from the ground.

The Colonel continued his retreat toward Pierre Woods, situated north of the town of Carthage, in order to neutralize the effect of the Confederate cavalry. Here the most severe part of the engagement occurred, and it was supposed that the enemy lost two hundred killed at this point. The Federal troops fought their way through, and reached the desired point. The fighting continued until the Confederate forces were so disabled that they were compelled to withdraw, having sustained a loss of two hundred and fifty killed, and a large number wounded. The Federal loss was eight killed, and forty-five wounded and missing. The Colonel then continued his retreat to the main line at Mount Vernon.

This retreat was one of the best executed military movements of the war, and accomplished only as such movements can be by brave men and good soldiers, led by officers competent and well qualified for their positions. In the hands of a political colonel or general, who understands the tactics of manœuvring a political convention better than he does a corps of soldiers, the whole command would have been cut off and captured.

In Western Virginia, there is abundant evidence of what a skillful and accomplished officer can do. When General McClellan found his division of the army in proper condition, he dashed upon the enemy with such fury, that they were dismayed even at the sight of the Federal troops. For several days the advance of General McClellan's column had been pressing the Confederate forces under Colonel Pegram, (the chief command being under General Garnet,) and driving them back from Laurel Hill toward Rich Mountain. On the 11th of July, the Federal forces came upon the enemy, strongly entrenched at Rich Mountain, and determined to fight.

Rich Mountain is a gap in the Laurel Hill range, where the Staunton and Weston turnpike crosses it between Buckhannon

and Beverly, and about four or five miles out from the latter place. It is about as far from Laurel Hill proper, (that is where the Beverly and Fairmont pike crosses it, and where the enemy was intrenched,) as Beverly is, fifteen or sixteen miles. It is also about twenty-five miles from Buckhannon.

General McClellan ordered four regiments, (the Eighth, Tenth and Thirteenth Indiana, and the Nineteenth Ohio,) to proceed along the line of the hills south-east of the enemy's intrenched camp on the Beverly road, where it crosses Rich Mountain, two miles east of the enemy's position, with orders to advance along the Beverly road, and attack the east side of the work; General McClellan being prepared to assault the west side as soon as the firing should announce the commencement of the attack. The capture of a courier, who mistook the road through the enemy's camp for the route of our troops, placed the enemy in possession of the movement.

When General Rosencranz reached the Beverly road, at two o'clock, after a most exhausting march over the mountains, he found the enemy posted on the opposite side of the road, about eight hundred strong, with two cannon, holding a strong position, partially fortified. An engagement immediately took place, and continued for three-quarters of an hour, when the Confederates were totally routed, with a loss of three hundred, including ten officers and both cannon. About seventy-five of the killed and seventy-five wounded fell into the hands of the Federal troops, besides one hundred and fifty prisoners.

General McClellan was in position with his whole force during the afternoon, ready to make the assault, but heard nothing from the other column, except distant firing early in the morning. He was proceeding to plant his cannon upon an eminence commanding a portion of the Confederate camp, and preparing to attack it in front, when it was ascertained that the enemy had evacuated the place during the night, moving

toward Laurel Hill, leaving a few men with their sick, and their cannon, camp equipage and transportation.

On the morning of the 12th, Colonel Pegram surrendered his command, consisting of six hundred troops.

On the night of the 11th, the Confederate army, at Laurel Hill, under Brigadier-General Robert S. Garnett, late a Major in the United States army, evacuated its camp in great haste, on learning of General McClellan's approach to Beverly, apparently hoping to pass Beverly before General McClellan's arrival, and thus escape the trap laid for them, by a passage through the Cheat Mountain pass.

The evacuation was discovered on the morning of the 12th, and a pursuit was instantly ordered. By ten o'clock the Indiana Ninth entered the camp on Laurel Hill, and found a large number of tents, a lot of flour, camp equipage and clothing, and several sick and wounded, with a note asking the Federal troops to give them proper attention. The whole road for twenty miles was strewn with the baggage thrown from the wagons, to facilitate their retreat.

The Confederate army went within three miles of Beverly, and there met the forces defeated by Rosencranz, flying from Rich Mountain, and finding escape to Huttonsville impossible, all united, and returned toward Laurel Hill, and took the road in the direction of St. George. General Morris' division pursued them for a mile or two beyond Leedsville that night, and then halted from eleven till three in the morning, when the advance resumed the pursuit, and continued it all day, in spite of an incessant rain. The Confederate army left the pike, struck Cheat river, and pursued the mountain road down the valley.

The advance, composed of the Fourteenth Ohio and Seventh and Ninth Indiana, pushed on, guided through the mountain gullies by tents, camp furniture, provisions and knapsacks,

thrown from the wagons to facilitate their flight. Our troops forded Cheat river four times, and finally, about ten o'clock, came up with the enemy's rear guard. The Fourteenth Ohio advanced rapidly to the ford in which the enemy's wagons were standing, when suddenly the Confederates opened a furious fire on them with small arms and two rifled cannon from the bluff on the opposite side of the river, where they had been concealed; but the fire, as usual, was too high to be effective. The Fourteenth returned the fire with spirit.

Meanwhile two pieces of the Cleveland artillery came up, and opened on the enemy, and the Ninth Indiana advanced to the support of the Fourteenth Ohio's left, while the Seventh Indiana crossed the river between the two fires, and came in on the enemy's right flank. The Confederates then fled in great disorder, leaving their finest piece of artillery.

At the next ford, a quarter of a mile further on, General Garnett attempted to rally his forces, when the Seventh Indiana came up in hot pursuit, and another brisk engagement ensued. General Garnett was finally shot dead, when his army fled in wild confusion toward St. George. The Seventh Indiana pursued them a mile or two, but the troops were so exhausted with their forced march of twenty miles, with but little rest from the march of the day before, that General Morris refused to let them pursue any further.

The result of the whole affair was the capture of the Confederate camp at Laurel Hill, a large amount of tents, camp equipage, forty baggage wagons, field camp chests, two regimental banners—one of them that of the Georgia Regiment—four Georgia captains and lieutenants, and a large number of Virginia officers, the death of General Garnett and twenty of his men, and a large number wounded. The Federal loss was entirely in the Fourteenth Ohio Regiment, two being killed, and two mortally wounded.

St. George, near where the battle was fought, is the county seat of Tucker county, Virginia, and about twenty miles north-east of Beverly. It is situated on the Cheat river, near the extreme south-western corner of Maryland, and not more than fifteen miles from the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad.

On the 15th of July, General Patterson moved to Bunker Hill, a point on the upper Potomac, nine miles below Martinsburg. When near the town, the Federal troops were met by a body of the enemy. Captain Tompkins' Rhode Island Battery had the lead, supported by the Twenty-first Pennsylvania Regiment, and followed by the Twenty-third.

Just below Bunker Hill, Colonel Stewart, with six hundred of the famous Black Horse Cavalry, drew up for a charge upon the Twenty-first, but failed to see the Rhode Island Battery, which opened with powerful effect, with shot, shell and grape. Colonel Stewart's charge was immediately broken, when the Second United States Cavalry, under Colonel Thomas, charged, and pursued him two miles, capturing one captain and one private. The enemy's force scattered into the woods, and the Second returned. The army then encamped for the night.

CHAPTER XX.

THE BATTLE OF BULL'S RUN.

The Federal army occupied Virginia, opposite Washington, from the 24th of May to the 16th of July, without making any advance into the enemy's country. This inactivity of the army was misunderstood by the people, and construed into a sort of indolence and want of vigor on the part of the Government. They imagined that men taken out of the counting-house, work-shop, and from the plough, could shoulder a musket, march on to the field of battle, and fight with all the skill andadroitness of veteran soldiers. Laboring under this erroneous impression, the cry was raised, "On to Richmond, storm Manassas and take the batteries." The echo was soon caught up by the newspaper press, and in their columns the Government was urged and censured, the Secretary of War was abused, and General Scott was scolded and quarreled with because he would not order an onward movement. At length, however, the veteran soldier suffered himself to yield to the clamor, and the order was given to march.

On the 16th of July, the army moved from Arlington; under the command of Major-General McDowell, in four columns. The extreme right under General Hunter; the right under General Tyler; the left centre under Colonel Dixon I. Miles, and the extreme left under General Heintzelman. The advance continued on the 16th and 17th, without meeting the enemy in force. On the afternoon of the 18th, as General Tyler's right centre was advancing along the Manassas road, a short distance west of Centreville, they received information that a

masked battery was planted on the left of the road ahead, and Colonel Richardson, in command of the Fourth Brigade, was ordered to reconnoitre, while the remainder of the division remained in the vicinity of Centreville. Colonel Richardson proceeded with three companies of the Massachusetts First, being the Kelsey company of Fusileers, and the National Guards.

They passed an open ravine, and again entered the road, which was densely surrounded by woods, when they were received by a raking fire from the left, killing a number of the advance. They gallantly sustained their position, and covered the retreat by a brass cannon of Sherman's battery, the horses having been completely disabled by the fire, until relieved by the Michigan Second and New York Twelfth, when they fell back. The Federal forces then took a position on the top of a hill. Two rifled cannon were planted in front, supported by Captain Brackett's company B, of the Second Cavalry, with a line of infantry, composed of the Michigan Second, and the New York Twelfth, some distance in the rear. A steady fire was kept up on both sides in this position.

The Confederates had two batteries of eight pieces in a position commanding the road. They used their guns well, except that they fired sometimes too high, but were gallantly faced by the Federal troops. They did not reply to the fire for half an hour, during which time they were receiving large reinforcements. In the meantime, Colonel Richardson's brigade reconnoitered the woods. While the troops were again thus advancing, they were met with a raking fire. The guns were again put in position, and poured grape and canister among the enemy until the supply was exhausted, and they then retired to wait for reinforcements, and camped for the night.

On the 19th and 20th there was no fighting, but active pre-

parations were making to attack the enemy in force. The ablest and best engineers in General McDowell's staff were sent out to reconnoitre, and report the enemy's position. They believed the enemy's left (or southward) could not be turned on account of the roughness of the road, and that it was not advisable to renew the attack of the 18th, on the batteries of Bull's Run. The most practicable route to another crossing was directly through Centreville, by which artillery could easily pass. This was the Warrentown road, and some distance down had the advantage of a path diverging from it to the north, by which a circuit could be made to the rear of the heavy batteries of the enemy; that following the main road would bring the troops directly in front of them. It was determined to send one brigade to hold the Bull's Run batteries in check, while the grand attack would be made by the Warrentown road, depending upon a column to pass to the north, and turn the enemy's position, and throw it into confusion.

The plan of the battle was well laid, and had the Federal troops contended only against the Confederate force then occupying Manassas, it would undoubtedly have resulted in the total defeat of the enemy. It appears that General McDowell had not calculated the possibility of General Johnson giving General Patterson the slip at Winchester, and, by railroad, join Beauregard at any moment with a heavy force. As Grouchey failed to intercept the Prussians at Waterloo, and lost the battle to Napoleon, so might General Patterson fail to hold Johnson in check, and so it proved in this case.

On Sunday morning, at two o'clock, the army was awakened from its slumbers, and in an hour was ready to move. The plan of attack was to advance upon the enemy in two directions; the main and centre column on the Warrentown road, in a direct line, until the enemy's batteries were

reached. A strong column to the right was to attack them in the rear. The Bull's Run batteries, on the left, were to be watched during the day, to prevent the enemy from issuing in that direction, and turn the left of the Federal forces.

Colonel Richardson, with the First Massachusetts, Second and Third Michigan, and New York Twelfth, with a United States battery, were placed upon the enemy's left. General Miles was placed at Centreville, with a reserve of nine regiments, consisting of the Eighth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-ninth, Thirty-first, and Thirty-second New York, Garibaldi Guards, and the Eighth New York German Rifles, and Green and Barry's United States batteries. This reserve was so situated as to protect the flank, and to be easily thrown forward to any point where they might be required.

The three columns that moved down the Warrentown road, were commanded by Generals Tyler, Hunter, and Heintzelman, the first making the direct centre attack, the two latter diverging to the north to take the batteries in the rear.

The division of General Tyler consisted of three brigades; the first brigade—Second New York, and First and Second Ohio, under General Schenck, and a battery of light artillery; the second brigade—New York Sixty-ninth, Seventy-ninth and Thirteenth, Second Wisconsin and Ayer's Battery, commanded by General Sherman; third brigade—First, Second and Third Connecticut, and Second Maine, forming the rear guard of the division, and commanded by General Keys. This brigade was accompanied by Tompkins' United States battery, and the New York volunteer battery, of Varian, and the thirty-two-pound Parrot gun. These three columns amounted to about nine thousand men. The divisions of Hunter and Heintzelman consisted of five brigades. General Porter's brigade was composed of the Eighth, Fourteenth, and Twenty-seventh New York, and companies of United States infantry, cavalry,



J. G. AMES

CHARGE OF THE BLACK HORSE CAVALRY AT THE BATTLE OF BULL'S RUN.

and marines, and Ransom's United States, and Griffin's West Point batteries. General Burnside's brigade was composed of the Rhode Island regiments, the New York Seventy-first, and the Second New Hampshire, accompanied by Reynolds' and Webb's batteries, and two light howitzers the troops had learned to work, and borrowed from the navy yard; a battery of thirty-two-pounders rifled cannon, under command of Capt. Seymour, who had fought in Fort Sumter.

The first brigade of General Heintzelman's division was composed of the Fifth Massachusetts, First Minnesota, and Fourth Pennsylvania. This Pennsylvania Fourth retired from the field of battle, because its term of three months' enlistment had expired, and they desired to return home. The motives that prompted such an act, is best known to themselves, but in the sight of their fellow-countrymen, it has the appearance of a want of courage and patriotism. The second brigade was composed of the First Michigan, the Thirty-eighth New York, the Fire Zouaves, and a battery of United States artillery. The third brigade was composed of the Third, Fourth, and Fifth Maine, and the Second Vermont. This column numbered about fourteen thousand men. We make the following extracts from accounts of the battle, taken on different parts of the field:

THE MAIN COLUMN.

Our first shot had been fired at half-past six, and it was now after seven; still the foe deigned no response, and it was plain he would not be satisfied unless we sought him deeper in his fastnesses. The big gun, therefore, was superseded by light artillery for closer service, and an order was given for the brigades, thus strengthened, to move right and left, and explore the adjoining woods. This order necessarily brought up the brigade of Key's, which now occupied the centre, but still acting as a reserve.

The timber branched away on either side, in a sort of crescent, toward the batteries of the enemy; on the right hand, however, it pursued the straightest line. Both brigades, with skirmishers well out, at once proceeded upon their respective tasks, Schenck following a left oblique along the edge of the wood, with Colonel McCook and the First Ohio in the lead; Colonel Tompkins and the New York

Second next, with the Third Ohio, under Colonel Harris, in the rear. The brigade proceeded in this way, exhibiting the utmost caution, for the distance of about a mile, when they struck a fine newly opened road to the left, whose clean, broad path seemed to invite their entrance. They turned into it, and followed it for some distance, when, to their surprise, it ended abruptly at a fence, with no evidence of any road beyond. Suddenly the enemy showed himself in two or three places to the left, and shaking his flags at our troops, opened a tremendous fire. It was promptly answered by the whole brigade, who endured the storm of balls with the greatest fortitude, and returned fire for fire. Several fell at this spot, and among others, the favorite drummer-boy of the Second. The poor little fellow was struck by a cannon ball, which took him just below the arm-pits, and literally cut him in two, his childish shriek of pain mingling with the rifled shot as his little life went with it down the wind. The storm from the batteries seemed now to increase rather than to slacken, and unable to endure it in such an exposed position, the brigade fell, in good order, back upon the wood. General Schenck, who exhibited throughout the whole affair the most reckless bravery, now ordered his men to emerge, and charge the main battery by a flank movement; but, owing to the remonstrances of nearly all the officers, the desperate project was abandoned. The men, though now out of musket range, were yet subjected to the constant drop of shell, which seemed to have instinctively found out their leafy covert; so, after consultation, they were drawn off, and retired in good order to their position in the neighborhood of the Parrot gun, hearing on their way the thunder of battle on the right, with an occasional heavy report from Richardson, on the extreme left, to indicate that the enemy had been putting his feelers forward at Bull's Run, to try whether a movement to turn our rear were practicable in that quarter.

The Sherman Brigade, which had separated from the central column, and went off to the right at the same time that Schenck's Brigade set out in the opposite direction, had proceeded but a little way upon their errand, before they were saluted with fearful showers of shot and shell; but receiving it only as a provocation, they overran two or three earthworks with their headlong charges, the Irishmen and Highlanders screaming with excitement all the while, and the stout Wisconsinians and brave New York Thirteenth silently wading by their sides.

THE FLANKING COLUMN.

Immediately after leaving the central column, the Burnside Brigade, having the lead, threw out its skirmishers, and proceeded along at a brisk rate, preserving, however, common time, in view of the long distance to be made. The course, for the first four or five miles, was rather boldly to the right. It then inclined more gently to the northward, and then, after some eight or nine miles had been accomplished, curved sharp toward the left. The march was a most fatiguing one, and though shaded to a considerable extent by long stretches of close timber, much of it lay in the glare of the hot sun, and all of it had its

share of stifling dust, except where we crossed the fields. But the men were hungry, and also very much fatigued, most of them having got but two or three hours' sleep the night before. Still they trudged cheerfully along, animated by the task before them, and made more elastic by the sound of the cannonade, which had for some time been heard, and which they were now sensibly approaching. In the brigade, nay, in the whole line, none heard this with higher spirits than the Seventy-first. About ten o'clock, the head of the column came into an open country, and after proceeding in it for a mile, Capt. Ellis, of the Seventy-first, detected a masked battery about half a mile to the left; and bringing our glasses to bear upon it, we could also perceive the enemy moving to their positions through the woods, in considerable force. Soon after this, General McDowell came riding up, and orders were given that we should proceed at a more rapid pace, and an hour more brought the brigade close to the rattle of the strife. The column now made its final curve, and turning sharply to the left, faced the roar of battle as it came from the head of the central column, which, under the lead of the Sixty-ninth, was now pressing its way toward us. The din of great guns and musketry at this point was almost deafening, and the very earth trembled at the roar of the heavier artillery. Burnside, who was forward, then sent an order to the Seventy-first to take its howitzers, and dash through a piece of woods, and form its position on the right of the Rhode Islanders. Obeying the order with alacrity, the Seventy-first passed the New Hampshire men in their impetuosity, and emerged into the fire, while the Second New Hampshire formed in good order on the extreme right.

The Rhode Island cannon were the first in position, and opened with good effect upon the battery that was peppering us with a heavy cross-fire from the left. The howitzers of the Seventy-first were next in play, and, between their heavy roar, the muskets of the brigade replied with interest to the similar salutations of the enemy. But the fire was most galling to us, from our exposed position; and among those of the brigade who fell before it was General Hunter, sufficiently hurt to require his removal from the field. Burnside lost his horse at the same time; while the charger of Governor Sprague had his entire head taken off with a shell, as his gallant rider was spurring him up and down the field. Captains Hart and Ellis, of Companies A and C of the Seventy-first, were likewise wounded in this fire, while bravely cheering on their men. "Cornelius," the faithful servant who had accompanied Colonel Vosburg from New York, and who, more lately, adhered to his successor, sank gently down by the side of Colonel Martin, and died from a rifle stroke just below the chest. Many others fell under that fearful hail, but the regiment sternly stood its ground; such bold spirits as Captains Coles and Meschutt. Commissary Borrowe, and Lieutenants Oakley, Embler, Maynard, Denyse and others, giving cheer, by their staunch coolness, to the entire line.

While the regiment was thus standing under fire, it came very near being thrown into confusion by the reckless conduct of Griffin's West Point Battery, which, without any sort of notice, tore through its line

in the rear, at top speed, in order to take up a position in the front, and thus actually cutting it in two. This discourtesy, to say the least of it, sprang, doubtless, from the contempt which the regulars are rapidly evincing for the volunteers; and, under ordinary circumstances, would have justified the Seventy-first in firing on them in retaliation. The fire of the enemy came doubly hot just at this moment; the regiment wavered slightly under it, and threatened for an instant to fall back. At this critical moment, an American flag suddenly appeared within the redoubt that had done us our greatest damage, and that still kept up its storm; but, seeing this signal, an order was given to cease firing, as we were shooting our friends. A further order was then made to advance our colors to the front; but, as it seemed to be certain death to stand exposed to the tornado which swept the brow of the hill, the color bearer naturally hesitated for a moment; whereupon several of Company F sprang quickly forward, with the exclamation: "Give us the colors!" But Captain Coles, of Company C, was the foremost in the effort, and seizing the flag, he ran with it full fifty paces to the front, and held it at arm's length high in the air, and then planted it on the earth. Its folds were hailed in the Rebel battery with a desperate yell, and in the next instant the bright banner was riddled with a shower of balls. Provisionally, the gallant Captain was untouched. * * * *

While the Seventy-first refreshed itself, the Sixty-ninth, which, with the Scotch regiment, the Wisconsin men and the New York Thirteenth, had been wading through batteries since their arrival on the field, marched past in splendid order, their banners flying as if upon review, and their faces sternly set on the advance. They passed down the hill obliquely to the right, on their road to support Griffin's battery, which was within two hundred yards of the artillery of the foe. Though silent as they passed, a shout rose in a few seconds afterward from the direction they had taken, which every listener could mark for theirs; and the spiteful one which responded from the Rebel battery was soon quelled by the volume of their musketry. Most prominent among them was Meagher, the Irish orator, who frequently, during the contests of that turbulent day, waved the green banner of his regiment up and down the hottest line of fire.

Porter's Brigade made its flank attack immediately to the right of the Seventy-first, going into the battle about eleven o'clock (half an hour later than the Burnside Brigade,) and performing its first duty by driving the enemy out of a piece of woods, and pursuing him, with loss, to a heavy battery which had partly raked the position of the First. The Fourteenth particularly distinguished itself in this attack, and received its highest encomiums from the Confederate prisoners, who said wherever those fellows in red breeches went, they strewed the earth with dead. In one of their charges their standard-bearer was shot down, and their general loss was heavy. Colonel Wood, Major Jordan and Captain Butt, of the engineers, behaved with especial gallantry; and all the rank and file exhibited the utmost steadiness and valor. The impetuosity, however, which chased the Confederates to their holes, was severely taxed by a scorching volley that

forced it, like all its comrades of the day, to fall back from those terrific covers for temporary shelter. They soon emerged again, however, and with their entire brigade, in which the Eighth and Twenty-seventh struggled to emulate the Fourteenth in its daring, charged altogether on a new battery to the left. The attack was brilliant, but, staggering with fatigue, the poor fellows were forced to recoil from the overwhelming storm, losing again a number of their men. It was the same story on all sides—reckless and desperate attacks on roaring and blazing barriers, with an inevitable recoil of the inadequate and unsupported columns. It was noticeable that in all these perfectly desperate and almost frantic charges, there was seldom any flanking or sustaining force, and generally an entire absence of all division orders when the regiments were required to fall back. Each colonel had to hive, shelter and manage his own men, and to say the truth, the rank and file but too often, from the deplorable incompetency of their immediate officers, were required to do the thinking, the fighting, and the manœuvring for themselves.

We now come to the attack of the Wilcox or Fire Brigade, consisting of the First Michigan, Thirty-eighth New York, and the far-famed Zouaves. This brigade, as I have before stated, made the widest flank circuit of the whole, and consequently did not take up its line-of-battle until half an hour later than the brigade of Porter, making its actual arrival on the field about twelve o'clock; all the worse for it, as it gave it the more weary march, and (under the excitement of the roll of battle) urged the last two miles at a most exhausting "double-quick," or run. The brigade took up its position along a fence running east and west, with the Eighteenth Michigan occupying the extreme left; the Scott Life Guard, or Thirty-eighth New York, under Colonel Ward, occupying the centre, supporting Griffin's battery, and the Zouaves holding the extreme right. No sooner had the brigade taken this position, than a rapid raking fire opened from a large battery on the left, while a heavy shot from the same quarter knocked over one of Griffin's guns, and killed five or six men. Upon this success, a body of sixty or seventy horsemen, with the view of taking advantage of the temporary confusion thus occasioned in our ranks, issued from the rear of a small clump of woods in front of the Zouaves, and, circling to the front, made an attempt to break the ranks of the brigade. The movement, however, was seen by our men in sufficient time to meet it, and the entire of the three regiments leveled a united volley on its ranks. With the flash and discharge, every rider of the troop, but five or six, reeled from the saddle to the earth, and the horses, such as were not desperately wounded, madly ran away. One of them, a fine fellow, black as a coal, who was not in the least hurt, came tearing toward the Thirty-eighth, when it was caught, and immediately mounted by Captain McQuade.

It was now nearly four o'clock, P. M., and the general battle seemed to have subsided; nay, almost entirely to have ceased; and nothing but an occasional great gun, and isolated flirt of musketry proclaimed its continuance in any quarter. The coat which had been chalked in conception of a boy, would not inclose the proportions of a man, and

we were destined, as is often the case with new beginners, to have our work turned upon our hands. This truth came soon; for suddenly, as we were resting, the roar of battle broke out again in every direction, and batteries we had thought mute for ever, now opened with redoubled fury. The most terrific yells from the enemy accompanied the renewal of the conflict, and it became evident that, instead of having yielded to the untoward fortunes of the day, they had only been refreshing themselves while pouring new regiments into their lower works. The Sherman Brigade, astounded by this new assault, was forced to retire from the position it had occupied; but it retreated in good style, and being now entirely without orders, began to march off toward the rear.

They passed, on their road, the brigade of Schenck; which, with the brigades of Howard and Franklin, had been since noon in the densest of the strife; the Maine boys and the Vermonters having signalized themselves especially by the enthusiasm of their charges; while none, during the tempestuous fortunes of that day, excelled the Minnesota and Fifth Massachusetts in the stubborn fortitude with which, again and again, they pressed through, and withstood the fiercest fire. As the Sherman Brigade went by, Schenck's men stood breathing in the woods, the New York Second occupying a position on the left. The Sixty-ninth brought up the rear of the temporarily retiring column; but its gallant Colonel, watchful of its welfare, lingered behind, and urged upon stragglers not to get separated from their commands. He paused for an instant to salute Colonel Tompkins, of the Second, who stood dismounted at a little distance from his regiment, on the opposite side of the road. Just at this moment, a large body of the enemy's Black Horse were seen making a charge toward them, though its immediate object was to attack Carlisle's battery, which, out of ammunition, stood limbered up in the centre of the road. The two Colonels watched the movement, and, transfixed with excitement as they saw the dragoons sabre the cannoniers, forgot to take measures for their own protection.

It was eminently necessary that they should; for the quick exploit upon the battery had scarcely retarded the black column in the least, and they came pouring upon the unformed columns of the Schenck Brigade. Promptly, however, the quick order of McCook shaped the First Ohio, and the others followed by instinct, showed a firm line, with bayonets all poised, and ready for the charge. The Black Horse looked for a moment, but, not liking that array of steel, they flirted off to the right, (receiving a volley as they went,) and a squad of them made a dash to cut off the two colonels who were isolated in the road. Tompkins, who saw the danger coming, quickly sprang to a horse near at hand, and calling on Corcoran to follow, spurred him to a fence. The troopers, however, were too near for Corcoran's tired steed, and, whirling around the Irish Colonel, they took him captive, and bore him off. A portion of the squad followed after Tompkins, but his spirited charger leaped two fences in fine style, and amid the crack of the dragoons' six-shooters, he got safe away. The brigade of Schenck, being now utterly fagged out, and being moreover entirely without orders, fell back upon the footsteps of the Sixty-ninth.

In vain did our startled faculties dart alertly hither and thither for some hope; in vain did our thoughts turn quickly upon Patterson. It would not do. Johnson was there before us, with his cool, fresh thousands, and our Waterloo was lost. That steady and untired host outnumbered the whole of our worn and staggering columns, and it penetrated us with a conviction of resistless power. Decently, however, did we gather up our force, not by general order, but by one sensible accord, and sad, and pained, and wearied, yet conscious of victory as far as we had fought, we folded up our columns for retreat. The only ones whose hardihood clung spitefully in the strife were a few regulars at the batteries, who, with the infatuation of experts, and begrimed with the mire of battle from all ordinary recognition, kept peppering at such batteries as would still provoke their fire.

Among the last to turn their faces from the fight they had so gaily sought, were the Burnside Brigade, which, accompanied by Sprague and its gallant Brigadier, and headed by all of its Colonels, retired in line of battle, with orders to cover the retreat. Though honored for its steadiness, the Rhode Islanders took off their battery, and the Seventy-first departed with its guns. All, thus far, had gone well with the departing movement, and our battalions from every portion of the field were retiring with decorum; when, of a sudden, some of the persistent regulars who were charged with the protection of the retreat, getting out of ammunition, sent back their caissons for a fresh supply. I have described how that branch of the service made its charges in the morning, and how recklessly it always sought its way to the front, through the formed columns of the volunteers. In the same manner did it now go back upon its errand, riding down everything in its road, and scattering the ranks of the regiments in every direction. The volunteers, who had never before seen such a sight, and who were already penetrated with the fearful pageant of the descending enemy, could only understand the movement in one way. Those flying carriages, and those madly excited men were rushing to the rear, and their action was, therefore, construed into a wild retreat.

The thought which appealed to their agitated minds, was, that if the regulars were in such haste to escape, it was necessary they should hurry for themselves, and one fearful panic took possession of them all. The ranks of most of the regiments were broken, the streams of flying men commingled; even officers who had behaved with courage throughout the day, felt justified, by the precipitation of the regulars, to urge their men, with a sympathising sense of pity, to hurry for their lives. Thus, mistake piled upon mistake, aggravated the misfortune, and culminated in a calamity which will rankle in the pride of the Republic throughout all her history.

Having now, by the course of this recital, carried the Federal army into and through all the perils of the wood, it will be necessary to get them entirely out. This brings us to the action of the reserve, and to the four regiments of Richardson, at Bull's Run. Of the latter, however, I have only to say, that he prevented, by his presence, the enemy from turning our flank in that direction, while the New Jersey regiments were a safeguard against our being out-circled on our right, either at Centreville or by the way of Falls Church.

The regiments constituting the reserve, under acting Major-General (Colonel) Miles, I have already enumerated at the outset; and the battle, viewed from their position, would consist merely of a record of sensations. At five o'clock, P. M., however, the New York Sixteenth and Thirty-first, being well in advance towards Blackburn's Ford, were called upon to stem the tide of the Virginia cavalry, who were swooping at our retreating forces. An order from Miles, consequently, sent the First Regiment, under Colonel Matheson, (New York Thirty-second,) forward to their support; but though the cavalry was thus turned to the right about, it was found to be impossible to stem the mad career of the extraordinary mass that came pouring back upon Centreville. The best that could be done, therefore, was for the California regiment to stay just where it was, and in absence of further orders, lend what aid it could to the protection of Green's battery, which was busily plying its fire upon the harassing approaches of the Virginia horse. While the Thirty-second was in this position, the Sixteenth and Thirty-first having passed within its range, a youthful orderly rode up to Colonel Matheson to inform him that the Black Cavalry, sheltered from his observation by a piece of woods, were coming up on the right, and if he would take a cut with his regiment across the fields, they would be turned back upon their errand.

The evolution was performed, gave the protection that was desired, and the Black Horse relinquished its purpose in that quarter. While the regiment, however, was adhering to this position, the same youth who had imparted the previous suggestion, rode up to the regiment again, and told Matheson he had better now fall back on Centreville, as his duty, at that spot, had been thoroughly performed. As this was about the first sign of orders (with one single exception) he had received during the entire day, Matheson felt some curiosity to learn who this young Lieutenant was, and whence these orders came; he therefore turned sharply on the youth, who, he now perceived, could not be more than twenty-two or three, and said, "Young man, I would like to know your name?" The youth replied that he was the son of Quartermaster-General Meigs. "By whose authority, then, do you deliver me these orders?" was the Californian's next inquiry. The young man smiled, and remarked, "Well sir, the truth is, that for the last few hours I have been giving all the orders for this division, and acting as General, too, for there is no General on the field." This incident is worthy of our notice among the lessons of the day.

The enemy were so badly crippled, that they were unable pursue the retreating columns. The troops threw away everything that incumbered their flight—guns, swords, knapsacks and overcoats; their only object was to reach a place of safety, and that place seemed to be Washington.

The Federal loss was nineteen officers, four hundred and sixty-two non-commissioned officers and privates killed; sixty-

four officers, nine hundred and forty-seven non-commissioned officers and privates wounded; and nine hundred prisoners and missing.

The following is a list of the principal Federal officers killed and wounded:

KILLED.—Colonel James Cameron, Seventy-ninth New York; Colonel Slocum, Second Rhode Island; Lieutenant-Colonel Haggerty, Sixty-ninth New York.

WOUNDED.—Colonel David Hunter, U. S. Army; Colonel S. P. Heintzelman, U. S. Army; Colonel O. B. Wilcox, Michigan Volunteers, (taken prisoner;) Colonel Corcoran, New York Sixty-ninth, (taken prisoner;) Colonel H. W. Slocum, Twenty-seventh New York; Colonel H. M. Wood, Fourteenth New York; Colonel Marston, Second New Hampshire.

Two batteries (in all, ten guns,) were actually taken upon the field; seven, which were abandoned in the flight, were subsequently picked up by the enemy; making seventeen guns, in all, that they took possession of. The whole force of artillery, of all calibres, in service on the Federal side, were forty-nine pieces, of which twenty-eight were rifled.

The following is a list of the principal Confederate officers killed and wounded:

KILLED.—General Bernard E. Bee, South Carolina; General Francis S. Bartow, Georgia; Colonel Nelson, Virginia; Colonel Fisher, North Carolina; Colonel Mason; Lieutenant-Colonel B. F. Johnson.

WOUNDED.—General Kirby Smith; Colonel Wade Hampton; Colonel S. J. Gartrell, Virginia; Colonel Jones, Alabama; Colonel Thomas, Colonel H. C. Stevens, Major Robert Wheat, Louisiana; Major Scott, Alabama.

The correspondents of the Southern newspapers place the loss of the Confederates, in killed, at six hundred; and the wounded at from two to three thousand.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE BATTLE OF WILSON'S CREEK—DEATH OF GENERAL LYON.

The defeat of the army of the Potomac at the battle of Bull's Run, had completely disorganized it, and had the enemy followed up the victory, Washington would most undoubtedly have fallen into their hands ; but, remaining on the battle field, simply content with a victory, at once proved their weakness, or a want of good generalship.

It was evident, now, something must be done to reorganize the army, and restore to the defeated soldiers confidence and ardor. They felt that they were not to blame ; that they had fought fiercely, savagely, and when one masked battery after another opened upon them, and poured its deadly hail in fearful showers upon them, rapidly thinning their ranks, they pressed steadily forward, and, at the point of the bayonet, silenced the enemy's works. There was a fault somewhere, and that fault the people loudly demanded should be remedied ; they scarcely knew where the fault of the defeat lay, whether in the incompetency of the officers, or the demoralized condition of the army. It was, no doubt, these causes combined, that led to that disastrous result.

It is a well-established fact, that from the time the army occupied Washington and Virginia, the officers neglected their men and themselves, and instead of observing that strict military rule that makes good soldiers, spent their leisure time in the hotels and saloons of the city, indulging in all sorts of dissipations and immoralities. Officers who had not passed the first simple rudiments of military knowledge, and who seemed

to think that a man was a soldier when a pair of epaulettes were stretched across his shoulders, and a sword dangled by his side, and therefore disdained further study. The men followed the officers' examples, obtained paroles and passes by the score, and spent their time in the city, drinking bad whiskey, destroying their constitutions, and demoralizing their minds. The consequence of this state of affairs was, a want of confidence in their officers, insubordination, and a total disregard of orders. An army commanded by good officers, in whom the men have confidence, and whom they are taught to obey, were never put to a total pell-mell rout, unless pursued and cut to pieces by overpowering numbers. But to fly from a defeated enemy, who is so crippled and disabled that pursuit is impossible, and who scarcely know they are the victors, for twenty-seven miles, is without a parallel. The causes, then, of this terrific panic must have been a want of confidence in officers, and a disregard of all military obedience. General McDowell's plans were complete, and, up to the arrival of Johnson, had been successful; but when the battle was recommenced, the incompetency of many officers was made manifest, and resulted in the ungovernable alarm of the troops, and for want of obedience, resulted in a rout instead of an orderly retreat.

It has been well-established, that the cause of the defeat at Bull's Run, was the reinforcements of General Johnson reaching Manassas, just at the time the Union army was victorious; while General Patterson imagined General Johnson in force at Winchester, he had given Patterson a military dodge, and darted down to Manassas just in time to rally the enemy's retreating forces. Whether General Patterson could have held him in check or not, is a question that perhaps never can be settled. Had he made a demonstration on General Johnson at that time, could he have defeated him, or would he have

been driven back to Maryland? Had he attacked Winchester and captured it during the absence of Johnson, could he have held it after the defeat of Bull's Run? General Patterson has declared to the people and the Government, that his position was such that he could not have successfully held General Johnson in check. In the absence of proof to the contrary, we must, in all charity to General Patterson, as a man of military skill, admit the truth of his declaration.

The brilliant victories of General McClellan in Western Virginia, brought him prominently before the people as a successful and energetic officer, and immediately a demand was made that he should be placed in command of the army of the Potomac. He was immediately ordered, by the Government, from the command of the division of Western Virginia, and offered the command of the disorganized army. He accepted it only on condition that he should be permitted to choose his own officers, which was at once granted. He ignored the practice that had been followed by the War Department, of appointing men to high offices for political considerations, and determined that a man's claims to a military appointment, should be his military knowledge and ability. In a short time the organization of a larger army was completed, and men and officers compelled to remain in camp and attend to their duties. Confidence was soon restored to the minds of the people and the army, and many good results were derived from the defeat of Bull's Run. Though it gave the enemy a temporary success, it proved more valuable to the Union cause than a victory.

The Confederate privateer Petrel (formerly the United States revenue-cutter Aiken,) left Charleston harbor on Saturday evening, the 27th of July, and was sunk in the mouth of the harbor on the following day, about fifteen miles south of Charleston light-house. The St. Lawrence, when coming up with the Petrel, who sailed within a mile of her before she discovered

her character, fired into the *St. Lawrence*, (at the officers, it was believed, upon the poop deck,) when the *St. Lawrence* returned a broadside of seven guns, one of the shot of which went entirely through the *Petrel*, and sunk her within fifteen minutes; when the boat of the *Petrel*, containing some men of her crew, was put out toward the *St. Lawrence*, at the same time displaying a flag of truce. This the men did not see, and continued to fire two or three shots with their small arms. They discovered by this time that the *Petrel* was in a sinking condition, and put out their boat and succeeded in saving thirty-six of her crew, including four of her officers. Eight of her men were drowned. The *St. Lawrence* was not injured in the least possible manner.

About the 1st of August, General Lyon, who was actively engaged in following the Confederate forces in Missouri, obtained information that a large body of the enemy, under the command of General Price, were advancing north. He immediately set out to meet him, with the Second and Third Missouri regiments, the Fourth and Second Kansas, and the First Iowa. On the afternoon of Friday, the 2d, he came upon the enemy. A force of two hundred and seventy of General Lyon's cavalry were crossing a ridge of high land, partly enclosed on the east by a valley, and, when descending the hill, came upon a large force of the enemy's infantry, estimated at from two to four thousand, and being unable to retreat, they charged and cut their way through, with the loss of only five men. The Lieutenant commanding the cavalry was killed after killing eight of the Confederates. Meantime the enemy appeared in large numbers, moving along the valley, but they were put to flight by the artillery. The infantry was not engaged. The Confederates retreated southward to a place called McCullough's store, on the Fayetteville road. The Confederate loss was about forty killed, and forty wounded.

Athens is a small village on the Missouri side of the Des Moines river, directly opposite the town of Croton, Iowa, a station on the railroad running west. There had been several hundred Union men in camp, the most of them citizens, who were being organized as Home Guards, under the command of Colonel Moore. At Croton, opposite, with no military guard, was a large quantity of army supplies, which the Confederates were extremely anxious to obtain. The Home Guards had been reinforced by two companies of rifle rangers, sent out from Keokuk. On Monday morning the enemy came up in three divisions of eight hundred each, evidently to surround the camp, and compel its surrender. Colonel Moore placed two of his companies to the right, and with two more engaged the centre, while the Keokuk troops, only a few moments on the ground, and with a scant supply of powder, engaged the left. The fight was continued an hour and three-quarters, and ended in the defeat and flight of the enemy, with a loss of twenty killed, and a number wounded.

The battle of Wilson's Creek, which resulted in the death of General Nathaniel Lyon, occurred on the 10th of August. Wilson's creek is a small stream near Springfield, Missouri, and a point to which General Lyon moved his forces, five thousand two hundred strong, to meet the enemy, numbering twenty thousand two hundred, knowing that to retreat without crippling his antagonist would result in the utter destruction of his army. We extract the following account of the battle :

General Seigel, with six pieces of cannon, his own regiment and that of Colonel Solomon's, moved in a southerly direction, marching about fifteen miles, passing around the extreme south-eastern camp of the enemy, and halted till daylight, or for the sound of artillery from the north-west, to announce the opening of the battle.

General Lyon, with the volunteers composing the Missouri First, Lieutenant-Colonel Andrews; Iowa First, Lieutenant-Colonel Merritt; Kansas First, Colonel Deitzler; and Second, Colonel Mitchell; part of the Missouri Second, under Major Osterhaus; and a detachment of twenty men from Colonel Wyman's Illinois regiment; three or four

companies of mounted Home Guards; a force of regulars about eight hundred strong, and two batteries of four and six pieces respectively, left Springfield about eight o'clock, P. M., marching slowly along until 2, A. M., when we halted for two hours, at which time Captain Gilbert's company of regulars, and Major Osterhaus' battalion were thrown out as skirmishers on either side of the column, and we moved forward.

Shortly after five o'clock, a party of Confederates, acting as a picket, was seen scattering over the hills to give the alarm; but a portion of our column had already penetrated far enough to cut off their route, unless they took a very circuitous one, in which case we should reach camp ahead of them. We soon came in sight of the valley in which they were encamped. A thousand tents stretching off into the distance, and partially screened from view by a hill jutting into an angle of Wilson's creek, were before us, presenting as animated an appearance as a young city. The enemy's camp extended from the head of the valley, overlooked on the north, east and west sides by hills and ridges two or three hundred feet in height southward about a mile, thence eastward a mile and a half, and then southward half a mile, following the windings of the creek, along whose banks the gentle sloping hills on either side afforded the most excellent camping ground.

Near the northern end of the valley lived John McNary, formerly from Indiana, who, finding the Confederates within five miles, packed up his few worldly goods, took his family, and started for the good old Hoosier State, where it is not a crime to be loyal to the Government under which we live. Not less than twenty or thirty families, living on farms in the vicinity, started about the same time, most of them having little or no idea where they were going, except to escape from the danger which threatened them.

The battle-field, where the most severe fighting was done, was along the ridges and hills on either side (mostly on the west) of the stream for the first mile mentioned above, where the creek runs in a southerly direction.

As we crossed the hill on the north, moving in a southwesterly direction, Captain Wright, with the mounted Home Guards, was sent to the east side, so as to cut off a party of Confederates seen in that direction. Adjutant Hascock, with a glass, rode to the brow of the hill, where, looking down, he could see every movement of the enemy beneath him. His appearance in full view caused a great hubbub in the Confederate camp, which had already been thoroughly aroused by our appearance, and tents and baggage were hastily loaded and moved toward the south. We had completely surprised them. The evidence of that fact was everywhere visible; but they had got quickly into line of battle—their clouds of cavalry were visible, and their twenty-one pieces of cannon were not long silent after ours had opened the engagement.

On the sides of the first ridge on the western side of the valley, Colonel Blair's regiment, at ten minutes after six o'clock, encountered a heavy force of infantry, not less than a full regiment, and after a severe contest they gained the summit, and the defeated Confederates

dispersed rapidly, going in a direction which rendered it impossible for any considerable number of them to again participate in the battle. Totten's battery then threw a few balls as feelers, to draw out the enemy's cannon.

Colonel Blair's regiment moved forward, and were soon met by a well-equipped regiment of Louisiana troops, whom, after a bitter contest of forty-five minutes, they succeeded in routing, though suffering severely themselves. Captain Lathrop's company of rifle recruits now assisted them, and together they, with Major Osterhaus' men, moved up the second hill, which was considerably larger than the first, and meeting a third regiment, finally succeeded in driving them back, with the assistance of Totten's battery, and gained the summit. In this part of the fight the gallant Missouri volunteers acted bravely—indeed, no words of praise could more than do them justice.

Of course, many acts of valor were performed not witnessed by me; but among those I saw conspicuous were Captain Gratz, leading his men against overwhelming odds, and falling in death just as he had repulsed the foe. Lieutenant Murphy dashed forward ahead of the line, waving his sword high in the air, shouting onward to the almost wavering men, who gained fresh courage from the exhibition, and pushing forward, drove the enemy from the field. In this fight, many of our brave soldiers fell to rise no more, while Colonel Andrews had his horse shot from under him, and was wounded himself slightly. General Lyon suffered in a similar manner; Captains Cavender, Cole and Yates, each slightly, or at least not dangerously wounded; Lieutenants Brown and Johnson, and Corporals Conant and Rogers, more or less severely wounded.

During this engagement two companies of regulars were sent to the east side of the creek to engage a force which was operating against Capt. Wright's cavalry, sheltering themselves behind a fence. Captain Plummer and Captain Gilbert, with their companies, marched close up to the fence and delivered an effective fire, but were compelled by great odds to retire, which they did, but again renewed the attack. The enemy being largely reinforced, and having now at least three thousand men, jumped over in the corn-field, and Captain Plummer's gallant band was imminently threatened with annihilation. They retreated rapidly, firing as they did so, when Lieutenant Dubois, having got his battery under headway on the hill near the Missouri volunteers, seeing the position of affairs on the opposite side of the valley, threw in the most precise manner several shells, which exploded just as they reached the dense mass of secessionists, scattering them lifeless on the ground in scores, while all who could were glad to run for dear life.

The gallant men in Colonel Blair's regiment were now ordered back, and their position taken by the Iowa First. General Lyon had previously had a poor opinion of the fighting qualities of these men, formed more from supposition than upon any real failure in duty, but now the time had come for him to reverse his judgment, which he did after their first repulse of the enemy. They fought like tigers, drove the enemy back, and followed up the advantage gained for a considera-

ble distance. Captain Mason, company C, was killed soon after his regiment was engaged. Lieutenant Purcell was mortally wounded. Major Porter and Colonel Merritt, gallantly cheering on their boys, escaped unharmed. The Kansas First and Second regiments were now ordered forward to support the right flank, of the Iowas.

Colonel Green's regiment of Tennessee cavalry, bearing a secession flag, now charged upon our wounded, who were partially guarded by one or two companies of infantry. Seeing the movement, Captain Totten poured a few rounds of canister into their ranks just in time to save our sick men from being trampled to death, dispersing the Confederates so completely, that nothing more was seen of them.

General Lyon now desired the Iowa boys, whom he had found so brave, to prepare to meet the next onset of the enemy with the bayonet immediately after firing. They said, "Give us a leader, and we will follow to death." On came the enemy in overwhelming numbers, confident of victory over such a meagre force. No time could be lost to select a leader. "I will lead you," exclaimed Lyon. "Come on, brave men;" and placing himself in the van, received a fatal bullet just at the pit of the stomach, which killed him instantly. The Iowas delivered their fire, and the enemy retired, so there was no need of charging bayonets.

General Lyon's body was carefully picked up, and conveyed toward the ambulances by two of his body guard. In his death, as in his life, he was the same devoted, patriotic soldier, regarding his own life as of no value if he could not rescue his country. His body was embalmed, and sent to his friends in Connecticut. There was no feeling of depression on the part of the troops at the unexpected calamity, but rather a feeling of quiet determination to revenge his death. On the Tuesday night previous, he had arranged for a night attack upon the enemy, but singularly found himself delayed two hours behind the proper time for starting, by rumors of a skirmish on the prairie west of town, and the attack was postponed. Wednesday he said to me—"Well, I begin to believe our term of soldiering is about completed. I have tried earnestly to discharge my whole duty to the Government, and appealed to them for reinforcements and supplies; but, alas! they do not come, and the enemy is getting the advantage of us." He then called a council of war, at which there was nearly an unanimous voice for evacuating Springfield.

General Sweeny plead eloquently against such a course, declared it would be the ruin of the Union cause in that quarter of the State, and urged a battle as soon as the enemy were within striking distance. He also pointed out the loss of reputation, both to the General and his officers, which would follow such a step. This counsel decided the course to be pursued, and Thursday, when the Brigade Quartermaster inquired when we were to leave Springfield, General Lyon replied, "Not before we are whipped." This was the proper course to pursue. If he retreated without a battle, he would certainly have been pursued by a boastful and unpunished enemy, and very likely have his retreat entirely cut off. After being wounded, he exclaimed to Major Schofield, "The day is lost;" but the Major said, "No, General, let

us try once more." So they tried, and the General fell. It was now a little after nine o'clock, and the battle had raged with a fierceness seldom if ever equaled, for over three hours. The smoke hung like a storm-cloud over the valley, a fit emblem of mourning for the departed hero.

"He sleeps his last sleep, he has fought his last battle,
No sound shall awake him to glory again."

The battle raged for two hours more, the command devolving upon Major Sturgis. The enemy made repeated attempts to retake the heights from which they had been driven, but were gallantly repulsed each time. The Kansas regiment behaved with a bravery seldom or never equaled, forming ambuscades for the benefit of the Confederates, by lying flat on the ground until the enemy came near enough for them to see their eyebrows, when they would pour a deadly volley into their opponents, and again remain in possession of the field. The last repulse of the enemy was the most glorious of all, and was participated in by members of every regiment on the field. The enemy came fresh, and deceived our men by bearing an Union flag, causing them to believe that Seigel was about making a junction with our forces. Discovering the ruse just in time, our gallant boys rushed upon the enemy, who, with four cannon belching forth loud-mouthed thunder, were on the point of having their efforts crowned with success, and again drove them, with great loss, down the slope on the south side of the hill.

Captain Totten's ammunition was now nearly exhausted, and placing Dubois' battery upon the hill at the north end of the valley, Major Sturgis ordered the ambulances to move toward town. The infantry and Totten's full battery followed in good order, and were not pursued by the enemy, who was evidently glad to be let alone.

Among the prisoners taken was a surgeon living in St. Charles county. He was immediately released, and Dr. Melcher accompanied him to the Confederate generals, arranging for the return of our wagons to bring in our wounded and dead. Lieutenant-Colonel Horace H. Brand, of the First Regiment, Sixth Division, who commanded the Confederate force at Boonville, and who said he was now acting as aid to General Price, was taken prisoner early in the day. The Illinois Twentieth made themselves useful by guarding the prisoners. One of them had a horse shot under him.

When General Seigel, who commanded the eastern division, heard the roar of Totten's artillery, he at once attacked the enemy in his quarter, driving him half a mile, and taking possession of his camp, extending westward of the Fayetteville road. Here a terrible fire was poured into his ranks by a regiment which he had permitted to advance within a few paces of his own, supposing it to be the Iowa First. His men scattered considerably, and Colonel Solomon's could not be rallied. Consequently, Seigel lost five of his guns, the other being brought away by Captain Flagg, who compelled his prisoners, some sixty in number, to draw the artillery off the field.

Our troops took some four hundred horses and about seventy pri-

soners, and compelled the enemy to burn nearly all his baggage, to keep it from falling into our hands. The enemy had twenty-one pieces of cannon, and at the last twenty-six, including those taken from Seigel. They were not worked with precision; every shot, for nearly an hour, going nearly twenty feet over our heads.

Our army reached Springfield in safety, and is now preparing to move toward Rolla, but with no hopes whatever of reaching there. With a baggage-train five miles long to protect, it will be singular, indeed, if the enemy does not prove enterprising enough to cut off a portion of it, having such a heavy force of cavalry. With two more regiments we should have driven the enemy entirely from the valley, and with a proper cavalry force, could have followed up such a victory with decisive results.

Our loss is about two hundred killed, and six or seven hundred wounded, while the loss of the enemy must have been double our own. Dr. Schenck, who was in the Confederate camp at a late hour last evening, bringing away our wounded, reports our men comparatively few with those of the enemy, whose dead were lying thick under the trees.

The army successfully retreated to Springfield, and from thence to Rolla, the enemy being unable to pursue it.

CHAPTER XXII.

GENERAL FREMONT IN MISSOURI—EXPEDITION TO HATTERAS
INLET.

The death of General Lyon was deeply deplored, and his loss at a moment so critical had a depressing influence. His brilliant achievements were still vivid in the minds of the people, and to him they had looked to clear the State of Missouri of the enemies of the country. As the story of his death and the causes which led to the battle were circulated, there arose from beneath all the appearance of a most glaring and dangerous neglect by the War Department of this gallant and skillful officer. The question was often asked, why he had not sufficient force to protect the State and his army against the immense army of the enemy. But it was never satisfactorily answered, and the mind involuntarily turned toward the War Office for an explanation. Other portions of the army had been abundantly reinforced, equipped and well armed; but Generals Lyon and Seigel, bold, daring, brave and competent officers, were neglected, and compelled to fight an enemy five times their own strength, to save the Federal forces from utter destruction, and cripple the enemy so that it could not pursue and harass them. To accomplish this, the battle of Wilson's Creek was fought, and General Lyon sacrificed his life for his country's good. But the army was saved, and covered itself with glory, and that fact alone makes the name of General Nathaniel Lyon immortal, while General Seigel, who shared in the perils of that day, still lives to add new glory and honor to his already great fame.

Amid the gloom that pervaded the country after the defeat of Bull's Run, and the death of General Lyon, there came an occasional gleam of sunshine.

On the 7th of August, Captain Kennedy, of the New York Nineteenth, belonging to General Banks' division on the upper Potomac, was informed that a company of Stewart's Confederate cavalry were oppressing the Union men in Loudon county, Virginia. With detachments amounting to one hundred men, he crossed the Potomac at Rock Ferry, and marched seven miles to Lottsville, arriving at the town about daylight. Ascertaining that the enemy had departed, they retraced their route about two miles, and lay in ambush until two o'clock, expecting the enemy would return. Becoming weary of waiting, they again started toward camp. When about three miles from the river, they were overtaken by a boy, who informed them that one hundred and thirty of Stewart's cavalry had entered the town. They were tired, hungry, and almost shoeless, but with one unanimous cheer they determined to face about and attack the foe. Starting at a double-quick, they soon gained the town, and taking the advantage of a corn-field, they rested a few minutes, and then charged on the Confederates, driving them from the place, with a loss of one killed and five wounded.

On the 13th, at Grafton, Virginia, fifty Federal troops of the Fourth Virginia Regiment, under the command of Captain Dayton, were attacked by a Confederate force numbering about two hundred men, commanded by Zacharia Cochran. After a sharp engagement, the enemy were defeated with a loss of twenty-one killed and a number wounded. No Federal loss.

General Fremont had returned from Europe, and was appointed to a Major-Generalship, and placed in command of the Western Military Division, head-quarters at St. Louis, Mis-

souri. Great expectations were entertained of the success attending his appointment. Immediately on assuming command of his Department, General Fremont proclaimed the State of Missouri under martial law, and on the 30th of August, he issued a proclamation that assumed very broad grounds. He declared that the property of all persons who had taken up arms against the Federal Government should be confiscated, and their slaves be made freemen. This proposition seemed to be departing from the policy laid down in the President's Inaugural Address, and from the avowed policy of the Republican party. Adhering strictly to the principles upon which he was elected, not to interfere with the local institutions of any State, the President, on the 11th of September, modified the proclamation of General Fremont, so as to meet the provisions of the Confiscation Act, passed by the extra session of Congress in July. The law specifies that whenever slaves are employed in or upon any fort, navy yard, dock, armory, ships or entrenchments, or in any military or naval capacity, against the Government of the United States, the person owning said slaves shall lose all right to their future services.

Great preparations were made by General Fremont to carry on the war in the West, and enormous sums of money expended without any perceptible results, except the erection of fortifications at St. Louis, and building a fleet of gun-boats. For reasons best known to the Government, he was relieved of the command of the Western Division on the 2d of November, and Major-General Hunter placed in authority.

General Fremont was believed to be a capable and efficient officer, competent to command with ability the troops placed under him. With a strong and valiant army, full of enthusiasm and valor, he had pursued the enemy into the south-west of Missouri, determined to give him battle, and if possible

annihilate his already demoralized forces; but before proving himself competent or incompetent to command a large force on an extended battle-field, he was removed from the command. He was beloved by his troops, and they were deeply grieved at his removal.

On the 20th of August, the Eleventh Ohio Regiment had stationed themselves about eight miles beyond Gauley, in the Kanawha valley, Virginia, and erected barricades around their position. During the day a force of Confederate troops about four thousand strong, advanced on their position, and after a sharp engagement were driven back with a loss of fifty killed, a large number wounded and taken prisoners, and several horses and equipments captured. Federal loss, none killed, and two wounded.

In Missouri, on the 20th, Col. Hecker started from the town of Ironton, surrounded a force of four hundred Confederate troops before breakfast, defeated them without loss on the Federal side, took twelve prisoners, captured all their camp equipage, and ate the breakfast the Confederates had prepared for themselves.

On the night of the 20th, in the southern part of the State of Missouri, Col. Dougherty, commanding a portion of the Twenty-second Illinois Regiment, and accompanied by Col. Ramson, of the Eleventh Illinois, made an attack at Charleston upon the Confederate troops about seven hundred strong, under the command of Col. Hunter, of Jeff. Thompson's army. After a slight skirmish, the Confederates fled, with a loss of forty killed, and seventeen prisoners. Federal loss, one killed. The Federal troops had been sent upon this expedition from Bird's Point, Missouri, by order of General Fremont.

We again turn to Western Virginia, where a sharp battle was fought on the 26th of August. The Ohio Seventh Regiment was encamped at a place called Summersville, under

the command of Col. Tyler. The Federal troops were not aware of the immediate proximity of the Confederate forces, and had not taken sufficient precaution to prevent a surprise. While at breakfast on the morning of the date above, they were surrounded by a Confederate force, consisting of three thousand infantry, four hundred cavalry and ten guns. They were attacked on both flanks and in front, but stood bravely up to the contest, notwithstanding the immense strength of the enemy. During the engagement, Col. Tyler sent a messenger to the approaching baggage train, and turned it back. They fought their way through the enemy's ranks with dreadful slaughter. They were scattered during the battle, but after cutting through, they formed in line of battle and again fired on the Confederates, but receiving no answer, they returned to the main body of the army. The enemy did not pursue them. The Federal loss was about two hundred killed, wounded and missing. They captured the enemy's colors, and two prisoners.

For some time the Government had been making extensive preparations for an expedition somewhere along the Southern coast. At the time of its departure its destination was unknown, and much anxiety was felt concerning it. The naval part was under the command of Commodore Stringham, a native of the State of New York, and a brave and accomplished officer. The land forces were under the command of Major-General Butler, of Massachusetts. The following vessels composed the fleet:—Wabash, Captain Mercer; the gun-boats Pawnee, Captain Rowan; Monticello, Commander Gillis, and the Harriet Lane, Captain Faunce; with the transports Adelaide and George Peabody, conveying troops to the number of about a thousand.

On the 29th, the fleet rendezvoused off Cape Hatteras Inlet, on the coast of North Carolina. The place was defended by

two forts, Hatteras and Clark, and garrisoned by about eight hundred Confederate troops. It was a point into which the Confederate privateers were in the habit of running with perfect safety, as well as vessels that run the blockade. The Government believed that by stopping this hole, it would cut off one vein that had kept the Southern Confederacy alive.

Three hundred men were landed through a heavy surf, and took a position on shore; the war vessels then run within range of the batteries, and the battle commenced. We make the following extract from a detailed description of the battle :

At ten o'clock the Wabash fired the first gun, the eleven-inch shell striking near the battery, and bursting with tremendous force. The battery, which was of sand, covered with turf, and mounting five long thirty-two's, instantly returned the fire, the shot falling short. The Minnesota and Cumberland immediately opened fire, and rained nine and eleven-inch shell into and about it. The fire was terrific, and soon the battery's responses were few and far between, save when the frigates suspended fire for a while to get a new position, when the enemy's fire was most spirited.

No damage was sustained by our ships, and when they again took their position the cannonading was intensely hot, the shells dropping in the enemy's works or falling on the ramparts, exploding in death-dealing fragments, and carrying death and destruction with them. The small wooden structures about the fort were torn and perforated with flying shells. At eleven o'clock, the immense flagstaff was shot away, and the Confederate flag came down, but the fire was still continued by them.

At twelve o'clock the Susquehanna steamed in, and dropping her boats astern, opened an effective fire. The cannonading on our part was incessant, and the air was alive with the hum and explosion of flying shell; but the enemy did not return the fire with any regularity, the battery being too hot for them, from the explosion of shells that dropped in at the rate of above half a dozen a minute. The enemy ceased firing a little before two, and after a few more shells had been thrown in the Commodore signaled to cease firing.

The troops had meanwhile advanced to within a short distance of the fort, and before we ceased firing some of our men got in and raised the stars and stripes. The place was too hot for the men, but the flag was left waving. Coxswain Benjamin Sweares, of the Pawnee's first cutter, stood for some time on the ramparts waving the flag amid a flight of shells. When the firing ceased, the fort was occupied in force and held afterward.

The Monticello had proceeded ahead of the land force to protect them, and had reached the inlet, when a large fort, of an octagon shape,

to the rear and right of the small battery, mounting ten thirty-two's and four eight-inch guns, which had till then been silent, opened on her with eight guns, at short range. At the same instant she got aground, and stuck fast, the enemy pouring in a fire, hot and heavy, which the Monticello replied to with shell sharply. For fifty minutes she held her own, and finally getting off the ground she came out, having been shot through and through by seven eight-inch shells, one going below the water-line. She fired fifty-five shells in fifty minutes, and partially silenced the battery. She withdrew at dusk for repairs, with one or two men slightly bruised, but none killed or wounded.

The escape of the vessel and crew was miraculous. Until this time we supposed the day was ours; but the unexpected opening of the large battery rather changed the aspect of affairs. Things did not look cheerful at dark. We had men ashore who were probably in need of provisions, and in case of a night attack, no assistance could be sent them from the Harriet Lane. As we lay close in shore we saw the bright bivouac fires on the beach, with groups of men around them. The night passed without an alarm, the enemy laying on their arms all night, expecting an attack.

At early daybreak on Thursday, the men went to quarters in the fleet, and at a quarter past eight, the vessels having borne down nearer than the previous day's position, the action began; the Susquehanna opening the day's work by a shell from one of the eleven-inch guns. The Minnesota and Wabash joined in immediately, and again the hum of the shell and their explosion were heard. They fired nearly half an hour before the battery responded, when it answered briskly. Our fire was more correct than on the previous day. The range had been obtained, and nearly every shot went into the battery, throwing up clouds of sand, and exploding with terrific effect.

At twenty-five minutes past ten, the Harriet Lane opened fire, and soon after the Cumberland came in from the offing, and joined in the attack. The Harriet Lane, with her rifled guns, did good execution, several projectiles from the eight-inch shell going into the battery, and one going directly through the ramparts. The fire was so hot that all of the enemy that could do so, got into a bomb-proof in the middle of the battery. Finally, at five minutes past eleven, A. M., an eleven-inch shell having pierced the bomb-proof through a ventilator, and exploded inside near the magazine, the enemy gave up the fight, and raised over the ramparts a white flag. We immediately ceased firing. General Butler went into the inlet, and landed at the fort, and demanded an unconditional surrender.

Commodore Barron, Assistant Secretary of the Confederate Navy, asked that the officers be allowed to march out with side arms, and the men be permitted to return to their homes after surrendering their arms. These terms were pronounced inadmissible by General Butler, and finally the force was surrendered without condition. Articles of stipulation were signed on the flag-ship by Commodore Stringham and General Butler on the part of the United States, and by Commodore Barron, Colonel Martin and Major Andrews on the Confederate side, and the latter's swords delivered up.

Thirty-one cannon, nineteen hundred stand of arms, and seventy-five kegs of powder were captured.

The following are the names of the captured officers :

Commodore Samuel Barron, late Captain United States Navy, Assistant Secretary of the Navy.

Colonel Bradford, Chief of Ordnance.

Colonel Martin, Seventh North Carolina Volunteers.

Lieutenant-Colonel Johnston, Seventh North Carolina Volunteers.

Major Henry A. Gillman, Seventh North Carolina Volunteers.

Major Andrews, Artillery, late United States Army.

Lieutenant Sharp, late United States Army.

And several others, late Army and Navy officers, and six hundred and sixty-five non-commissioned officers and privates.

This victory caused a tremendous panic in the South, for they felt that the Federal Government was able to strike a heavy blow at any time and any place upon the Southern coast. In the North it was hailed with delight, and the one prevailing sentiment was, "Give it to them again."

CHAPTER XXIII.

RETREAT OF GENERAL FLOYD—CAPTURE OF LEXINGTON,
MISSOURI, BY THE CONFEDERATE ARMY.

For some time a town known as Boon Court House, in Western Virginia, had been occupied by about six hundred Confederate troops, who were very annoying and troublesome to the surrounding country. On the first of September they were attacked by two regiments of Federal troops, under the command of Captain Wheeler, and after a short skirmish, they were routed, with a loss of thirty-five killed, several wounded, and five prisoners. Twenty-two horses and a considerable quantity of arms were captured. The Federal loss was six wounded. The town was then completely destroyed.

On the 4th of September, about six hundred Federal troops were at a place called Shelbina, Missouri. During the day, they were attacked by a Confederate force of about three thousand five hundred men, with two pieces of artillery, under command of Martin E. Green. For two hours the Federal forces held the enemy in check, anxiously expecting reinforcements from General Hurlbut; but being overcome by the superior numbers of the enemy, and the reinforcements failing to arrive, they were compelled to retreat, with a loss of horses, wagons and camp equipage.

Turning our attention again to Virginia, we find that on the 11th of September a skirmish took place at Lewinsville, on the line of the army of the Potomac protecting Washington. A reconnoitering party of the New York Seventy-ninth, under Colonel Stevens, advanced as far as the town of Lewinsville,

where they were met by a force of the enemy composed of four regiments of Virginia troops, including Stewart's cavalry. A sharp engagement took place; but the Federal forces having accomplished the object of the expedition, retired in good order, with a loss of six killed, and seven wounded.

On the 12th, General Rosencranz, with a strong reconnoitering force, came upon about five thousand of the enemy, under General Floyd, and strongly intrenched, with sixteen pieces of cannon mounted, at Carnifax Ferry, on the Gauley river. General Benham attacked the outposts of the enemy, and drove them back on the lines. The Confederates then opened on the Federal troops with their cannon, using shell and grape. The battle continued five hours, when night came on, and put an end to the conflict. The Federal troops lay on their arms all night, determined to renew the attack in the morning, and drive the enemy from his works. In the morning an advance was again made upon the works, but they were silent; and when entered by the Federal troops, it was discovered that the enemy had fled, leaving his camp equipage, tents and arms. In his flight, the enemy had destroyed the bridges across Gauley river, and thus prevented pursuit. The Federal loss was sixteen killed—Colonel Lowe, of the Twelfth Ohio, among them—and ninety-seven wounded.

General Reynolds had intrenched himself at a place called Elkwater, in Western Virginia. About the 12th of September, General R. E. Lee, commanding about nine thousand Confederate troops, commenced a series of strategic movements to drive the Federal troops from their position. After several days' skirmishing, the enemy retired, with a loss of about one hundred killed. During one of the skirmishes, John A. Washington, a relative of the immortal George Washington, and the parsimonious and miserly owner of Mount Vernon, the home and grave of that illustrious patriot, was killed; a

fitting end to the life of one who had made himself obnoxious to his fellow-countrymen, and blackened the illustrious name he bore with infamy. The Federal loss was none killed, two missing, and sixty prisoners.

A portion of the Pennsylvania Eighth Regiment were posted at a place called Prichard's Mill, on the upper Potomac. On the 15th of September, they were attacked by a strong detachment of Confederate troops, and after a brisk engagement, the enemy were driven off, with a loss of eighteen killed, and a number wounded.

After the departure of the Federal troops from Boonville, Missouri, its only defence was a body of Home Guards, numbering about one hundred and fifty, commanded by Capt. Eppstine. About the 13th of September, they were attacked in their intrenchments by a force of six hundred Confederate troops, under the command of Colonel Brown. A brisk engagement followed, which resulted in the defeat of the Confederates, with the loss of Colonel Brown, and ten privates killed, and thirty wounded.

Missouri has been the field of many hard-fought battles, and its soil has been wet with the blood of many good and noble men, who fell in defense of their homes and their country. Five hundred and seventy of the Third Iowa Regiment, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Scott, were posted at a place called Blue Mills, and on the 17th of September they were attacked by a Confederate force amounting to four thousand five hundred strong. The Federal troops were intrenched, and had but one piece of artillery. For an hour they withstood the charges of the overwhelming numbers opposing them; but finding themselves too weak to successfully sustain their position, they retreated in good order, and occupied a better one. They were then reinforced by the addition of fourteen hundred troops, under Colonel Smith, and

pursued the Confederates, who had retreated during the night. The Federal loss was sixteen killed, ninety-four wounded, and six missing.

At Morrattstown, a body of Confederate troops, four hundred strong, were routed with a loss of seven killed, by the Federal forces, numbering about six hundred. One hundred horses, all the tents of the enemy and their provisions were captured. Federal loss—Colonel Johnson and two privates killed, and six wounded.

The most severe contest of the war, and one in which the greatest amount of valor and desperate bravery had been displayed, was at Lexington, Missouri. At this place, Colonel James A. Mulligan was posted with about three thousand six hundred men. He had strong intrenchments erected on the hill commanding the town, and in these he had five pieces of artillery and two mortars. He had under his charge a large number of horses, army stores to the amount of \$100,000, and \$900,000 in specie, belonging to the Missouri banks. On the 16th of September he was surrounded by a Confederate force, under the command of Governor Jackson and General Price, amounting to twenty thousand men. They immediately made a charge on the Federal works, but were repulsed with great loss. Finding they could not capture the works by assault, they endeavored to cut off the supply of water. In this attempt they were again unsuccessful, and driven back with great slaughter. Believing, however, their only hope of success lay in depriving the garrison of water, they procured bales of hemp and rolling these before for a protection against the unerring aim of the Federal troops, they obtained a position that commanded the river, and cut off the supply of water. Still the garrison did not surrender, but continued to fight, though almost perishing from thirst. Hoping that succor would be sent them by General Fremont, from St. Louis,

the brave Mulligan and his band fought on, quenching their thirst with vinegar, and almost suffocated by the stench arising from horses killed within their works. For five days they withstood the assaults of this huge army, and for fifty-nine hours they fought without water. At length, despairing of succor reaching them, and driven to desperation for the want of water, they surrendered to the enemy: three thousand five hundred men as prisoners of war. Federal loss—twenty-five killed and seventy-two wounded. The loss of the enemy was about twelve hundred killed and wounded. All the property under the care of Colonel Mulligan, and about three thousand stand of arms fell into the hands of the enemy.

No authentic reasons have ever been made public why General Fremont did not push forward to the assistance of Colonel Mulligan. It was reported that he had not a sufficient force to meet an enemy so strong. But Generals Lyon and Seigel had met the same enemy, when he was equally as strong, with a force little stronger than that of Colonel Mulligan's, and so crippled him that he could not pursue the Federal troops, who were leisurely retreating before him in an open field. It is a fact beyond dispute, that General Price and his men had such a horror of the Federal troops, that when met by a force of any consequence in comparison to their own, retreat was the order. It is a fixed opinion in the public mind, that had a small force fallen upon the Confederate forces, after meeting with such obstinate resistance from Colonel Mulligan, that they would have retreated, and the gallant Colonel and his valorous band been saved from the necessity of surrendering.

On the 24th, five hundred of the Fourth Ohio Regiment, with one piece of artillery, and seventy-five of the Ringgold Cavalry, under the command of Colonel Cantwell; four hundred of the Eighth Ohio Regiment, under Colonel Harte, made an advance from New Creek, Western Virginia, toward Romney.

At a place called Mechanicsville Gap, they came upon a body of the enemy, seven hundred strong, and completely routed them; they then advanced on Romney. The town was defended by about fourteen hundred Confederate troops, composed of infantry and cavalry. They immediately attacked the enemy's lines, and, after a short engagement, drove them to the mountains, with a loss of thirty-five killed, and a number wounded. Federal loss—three killed and ten wounded.

CHAPTER XXIV.

ATTACK ON THE ZOUAVES AT FORT PICKENS—BATTLE AT
BOLIVAR HEIGHTS.

On the first of October, an attack was made by Colonel Engart, commanding a detachment of Ohio and Virginia troops, on the Confederate forces at Chapmanville, Virginia, and, after a brisk skirmish, completely routed the enemy. In his flight from the attacking force, the enemy ran afoul of Colonel Hyatt, who, in turn, accelerated their movements by attacking them furiously. In the two contests, the enemy lost one hundred killed, a large number wounded, and seventy prisoners.

In Western Virginia, General Reynolds was moving briskly among the mountains, and giving the Confederate forces considerable trouble. On the 3d of October, he made a reconnoissance in force, in front of the enemy's intrenchments at Buffalo Hill, on the Greenbriar river. His force consisted of five thousand men, with which he made the attack upon the enemy's lower intrenchments. They drove him from his position, and following up his success, found the enemy strongly fortified, and receiving reinforcements. The Federal troops then withdrew, with a loss of ten killed, and thirteen wounded.

After the capture of the forts at Hatteras Inlet, about three hundred and fifty Indiana troops were landed at Chicomamico, North Carolina. On the 3d of October, the enemy landed a force of about two thousand five hundred, and attacked the Federal troops, capturing all their tents and baggage, and taking fifty prisoners. They were, however, compelled to retire without capturing the whole force. On the 5th, they

landed a force sufficiently strong, as they supposed, to warrant success. They had just engaged the brave Indianaians, when the steamship Monticello drew up within range, and poured such a shower of shot and shell upon them, as to create a most inglorious stampede. During three hours the Monticello sent among them two hundred and eighteen shot and shell, creating a terrific slaughter, but the Federal troops were saved.

Following around the coast, we come to Fort Pickens, in the State of Florida, commanded by Colonel Brown. During the summer, the fort had been invested by the Confederate General Bragg, of Buena Vista notoriety, (the man who General Taylor, at that memorable battle, ordered to give the enemy "A little more grape,") with the evident intention of reducing it. The enemy had occupied Forts McRae and Barrancas, and placed in position heavy guns, bearing on Fort Pickens. They had erected strong batteries on the main land, extending in a semi-circle for several miles; the whole line of works mounting, perhaps, two hundred guns. Great preparations had been made to bombard the fort, and, according to the declarations of the Confederates, it was to suffer the fate of Fort Sumter. Various days had been appointed by the enemy to open fire; but finding Colonel Brown, assisted by the war vessels in the harbor, ready to open the contest with them, it was postponed from day to day. From six to eight thousand troops were constantly kept in the works, or close by, General Bragg fearing that a less force might not be effective.

Among the reinforcements sent to Colonel Brown, was a regiment of Zouaves from New York city, known as "Billy Wilson's Zouaves." The regiment was composed of the most daring and desperate men of the city, reckless, brave and fearless. This regiment was encamped on Santa Rosa Island, near the fort. On the night of October the 9th, a force of fifteen hundred of the Confederates made an excursion to the

island, landing upon the extreme northern end of it, and under cover of the trees and underbrush, they advanced upon the unsuspecting Zouaves, and attacked them about two o'clock in the morning. The force of the Zouaves in camp was only about two hundred and fifteen, the remainder being on special duty. The attack was so sudden and unexpected, that the enemy advanced upon the camp and fired it. The Zouaves, however, fought bravely, and being reinforced by two companies of regulars from the fort, they drove the enemy from the island, with terrible loss. Twenty-one dead were left on the island, and thirty-five prisoners. According to the enemy's published account of the battle, they lost three hundred and fifty killed, wounded, and missing. Federal loss—sixteen killed, twenty wounded, and ten prisoners, among them Major Vogdes.

Colonel Brown waited for the enemy to open his batteries, but they observed a stolid silence. After this event, however, the Federal batteries opened on the enemy, bombarding him for two days, and destroying many of his works, and burning the Pensacola Navy Yard. The fort sustained no damage or loss whatever.

Moving still further around the coast, we come to the mouth of the Mississippi river. The blockading squadron on this station consisted of the war-ships Richmond, Huntsville, Water-Witch; sloops-of-war Preble, Vincennes, and the steamship Nightingale. For several months the Confederate Commodore Hollins, at New Orleans, had been preparing a formidable fleet of fire-ships, and an impregnable steam ram, called the Manassas, to attack the Federal fleet, and by burning and sinking the vessels with the aid of the ram, to exterminate it. This steam ram Manassas, was a sort of mud-turtle-shaped concern, and about as rapid in its movements as its model; was made round over the top and sides with heavy

timber, and coated with railroad iron. In front was a projecting snout, not unlike the head of a turtle, protruding from its shell, which was intended to penetrate the sides of vessels, on the water-line; it was armed with two guns near the bow.

With several fire-ships, and this strange and useless piece of naval architecture, the gallant Commodore, on the night of October the 12th, descended the Mississippi river, and came in contact with the fleet. The war vessels quietly dropped down the stream, out of the range of the fire-ships, while the Richmond received one blow from the ram; but, contrary to the expectations of the enemy, the Richmond did not sink, but with two guns beat off this formidable fleet, and without any loss or injury, except the starting of a plank, where the monster struck her.

We return again to Virginia, along the line of the upper Potomac. On the morning of the 16th, the Confederate troops, about two thousand strong, commanded by Colonel Turner Ashby, appeared at Bolivar Heights, at Harper's Ferry, on the opposite side of the Potomac from the Federal lines, and began an attack with artillery. The Third Wisconsin Regiment crossed the river, and attacked the enemy, drove him back, and captured a thirty-two-pounder Columbiad. They were set upon by a force so strong that they were compelled to retire and leave the gun. Colonel Geary crossed to the assistance of the Wisconsin troops, and again drove the enemy back, and re-captured his battery and the thirty-two-pounder gun.

Colonel Geary sent the following dispatch to his commanding General:

SANDY HOOK, October 16.

I have just ridden into camp on a thirty-two-pounder captured from the enemy at Bolivar.

JOHN W. GEARY.

The loss of the enemy was about fifty killed, and one hundred wounded. The Federal loss was four killed, and seven wounded.

On the 16th, Major Gavitt, of the Indiana cavalry, attacked the Confederate forces near Pilot Knob, Missouri, but they were too strongly posted. He was afterward reinforced by Colonel Alexander, with six hundred Illinois infantry. The enemy followed up the Federal forces, fighting as they proceeded, until they fell into an ambuscade, and were completely defeated, with a heavy loss.

A sharp engagement took place at Big Hurricane Creek, Carroll county, Missouri, on the 19th. Colonel Morgan with two hundred and twenty men, and two guns, defeated about four hundred Confederate troops, with a loss of eighteen killed, and eight prisoners.

CHAPTER XXV.

BATTLE OF BALL'S BLUFF.

For several miles above and below Harrison's Island, Goose Creek and Edwards' Ferry, the river flows through rugged passes, and is surmounted on either side by high bluffs, many of which are densely wooded; affording fine opportunities for the erection of defenses by the Confederates wherever there may be a necessity for them. Goose Creek is a stream of considerable size, flowing through Loudon county, and emptying into the Potomac, four miles east of Leesburg. Poolesville is about five miles back from Conrad's Ferry, and forty miles north-west from Washington city. From Conrad's to Edwards' Ferry is about six miles. The Alexandria and Loudon Railroad, the upper portion of which is controlled by the Confederates, is not of much importance to them, as it has no connection with any other road, except at Alexandria. From the vicinity of Vienna, they can use it to Leesburg; but with the limited transportation power in their possession, it is of little importance. The country on either side of the river in the vicinity is sparsely populated.

The Virginia side of the Potomac in this region was occupied by the Confederate forces, whose pickets frequently appeared on the high bluffs overlooking the river, and in full view of the Federal forces.

Harrison's Island, on which there are several farms and farm-houses, is about two-thirds of the distance from the Maryland side, leaving two hundred yards of the Potomac flowing between it and the Virginia bank. The current is

strong, and the river deep. On the Virginia side of the river, and opposite this island, is the bluff known as Ball's Bluff, and made memorable as the spot where patriotic, good and loyal men poured out their blood in defense of their homes and their country. We extract the following account of the battle:—

On Saturday night last, Colonel Devin, of the Fifteenth Massachusetts, who had for some time guarded Harrison's Island with one company, ordered Captain Philbrick, of Company H, and Quartermaster Howe, of his staff, with a detachment of two hundred men, to scout the Virginia shore, in the direction of Leesburg. They crossed from the island to the shore, and executed the order by approaching within three-fourths of a mile of Leesburg, returning to their starting-point about ten o'clock at night, discovering, as they supposed, a small camp about one mile or more from Leesburg.

On reporting to Colonel Devin, the latter, with about three hundred men, pushed forward, by direction of General Stone, in the same locality, with orders to destroy the camp. At daybreak, the scouts returned to Colonel Devin, who remained with his command concealed, and word was sent back that no enemy was in sight; Captain Philbrick's company taking an advanced position, while the remaining companies were concealed, as a reserve, in case of an attack on the advance. When about a mile and a half from the river, and five hundred yards in advance of Colonel Devin's reserve, Captain Philbrick, accompanied by Colonel Devin in person, attacked and drove back a company of Mississippi riflemen, and then fell back to the reserve, concealed in the rear, on the appearance of a body of Confederate cavalry. In the skirmish, Captain Philbrick had a difficulty in getting near enough to the enemy for his smooth-bore guns to have much effect, whereas the others used long-range rifles on our forces.

At daylight, and the same hour that Colonel Devin's command left the shore to make the advance, Colonel Lee, of the Twentieth Massachusetts, sent over one company of his regiment, which remained on the shore, to cover the return of Colonel Devin. The Colonel, however, maintained his ground, and was reinforced, during the morning, by three hundred more of his regiment, under Lieutenant-Colonel Ward. About one o'clock, he was attacked by a considerable force of riflemen, who attempted to outflank him.

Fearing that they might be successful, and after resisting them for some time, Colonel Devin slowly retreated in perfect order to the river, where General Baker had arrived with a battalion of the California Regiment, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Wistar.

General Baker then took command, first complimenting Colonel Devin for his successful resistance to a superior force, and giving his command, now less than six hundred men, the right of the line of battle, the centre and left being formed of about three hundred of the Massachusetts Twentieth, under Colonel Lee, and the California batta-

lion, about five hundred in number, under Lieutenant-Colonel Wistar. Two mountain howitzers, commanded by Lieutenant French, and one piece of the New York battery, commanded by Lieutenant Bramhall, were in front of the centre just previous to the commencement of the action.

The attack was commenced by the enemy on our right, but was soon directed more heavily to the centre and left. For about two hours the battle raged terrifically, and a complete shower of leaden hail fell. Three several times the left of the line made an advance, but was compelled to retire as often. The right was better protected, and held their position.

An order came from General Baker to throw two companies of the Fifteenth Massachusetts to the centre, which was immediately executed. This produced the impression that the battle was going against us, but caused no confusion or dismay.

The left was hard pressed, but remained firm. About this time the news spread that General Baker was killed. While in the act of pushing a cannon forward, with his shoulder to the wheel, he was pierced by six balls. He was evidently the object of the enemy's sharpshooters. After this there was a cessation of the fire for a few minutes, during which Colonel Cogswell, of the Tammany Regiment, arrived with two companies, and he, being the senior officer, the command devolved on him.

In a short time it became evident to Colonel Cogswell that the day was lost, and he thought it best to cut his way through to Edwards' Ferry, where General Gorman was in charge, throwing over reinforcements by direction of General Stone, who was within sight of the battle-field at Edwards' Ferry; directing the general movements. An order was now issued to transfer the Fifteenth Massachusetts from the right to the left, which was executed as calmly as at a battalion drill.

Colonel Cogswell soon became satisfied of the impossibility of reaching Edwards' Ferry, as desired, and gave an order to fall back toward the river, which was executed as well as circumstances would permit. They reached the river bank about twenty minutes before nightfall. Here the Fifteenth deployed as skirmishers along the shore.

The only means of conveyance to the island was a large boat capable of carrying about forty persons, which was overcrowded and swamped. The troops remaining along the shore made a desperate resistance, and it is believed that the enemy took comparatively few prisoners in consequence. Those who could swim plunged into the water, many carrying their arms with them, and others throwing them into the river, to prevent them falling into the enemy's hands. Some escaped by availing themselves of the darkness and the heavily-wooded banks; but several are known to have been drowned in the waters of the Potomac.

The behavior of our troops before a superior number of the enemy was marked by noble bravery and endurance. Near the close of the action, and after the day was considered irretrievably lost, the two companies of the Tammany Regiment, which had just arrived, made a desperate charge on the enemy, but were met with a terrific fire.

The Federal loss in this engagement was about eight hundred killed, wounded and missing. The Confederates acknowledged a loss of three hundred killed and wounded, and by multiplying this acknowledged loss by three or four, we may in all probability arrive at the more correct figures.

Again the people were called upon to mourn the loss of a brave and noble man, Colonel E. D. Baker, commander of the California Regiment. He was one who, with his wise and patriotic counsels in the deliberate councils of the nation, was listened to with profound attention, and in the camp was loved as a kind and amiable commander, and on the field of battle was acknowledged as a brave and valorous officer. He was one of the United States Senators from the State of Oregon, and on account of his holding the office of Senator, he could not accept from the United States Government a commission as a Brigadier General, without resigning the former office. Desirous of serving his young State, who needed his wisdom and his influence, and wishing to aid his Government in its struggle against her foes, he contented himself with the position of a Colonel. He was a man of powerful eloquence, shrewd and clear logic, comprehensive and convincing in argument. His soul being enlisted in the cause of his country, he dealt with her enemies as sharply with his eloquence and logic as he did with his sword. He was loved as a citizen, honored as a statesman, and immortalized as a soldier who died in defense of his country, her rights and her honor.

There is a terrible responsibility resting somewhere in consequence of this battle, and the immense slaughter of troops by an overwhelming enemy, pouring their thousands of riflemen upon a foe whose retreat was most effectually cut off. That there was great neglect in some direction was most palpable and conclusive, and however much we may attempt

to veil the catastrophe to our arms, we cannot hide from it that one hideous fact. 'If the commanding general desired to make a reconnoissance into the enemy's country, and innocently sent a force across the river for that purpose, was it not first his duty to provide a safe and speedy transport to and fro across a deep and rapid stream? That there was not sufficient transport in case a hasty retreat from overpowering numbers of the enemy was necessary, is a fact, or sufficient means to reinforce the brave but faltering troops is equally true. Driven back by the hail of lead from the enemy, the troops found themselves upon the margin of the river with death before and behind them, and escape entirely cut off. Their position was awful, and as the enemy pressed upon them, the slaughter became more terrific, and had night not come to relieve them, and the enemy too cowardly or humane to pursue them, they would have been annihilated. Where the responsibility of this battle rests we cannot say, and if it ever comes to the knowledge of the people, future history must record it.

CHAPTER XXVI.

BATTLE AT FREDRICKTOWN, MISSOURI—CHARGE OF ZAGONI'S
CAVALRY—CAPTURE OF ROMNEY, VIRGINIA.

On the 23d of October, an engagement of some importance took place near Fredricktown, Missouri, between a force of Federal troops numbering about four thousand, commanded by Colonel Carlin, Colonel Ross and Colonel Baker, and a Confederate force of six thousand, commanded by Jeff. Thompson.

The Confederates were posted about one mile below the town on the Greenville road. At this point a ravine crosses the road, and in this the enemy had taken a position. Their artillery was posted so as to command the road, and sweep it on the approach of the Federal troops. The battle, however, was short, and after a sharp fight of two hours, the enemy were completely routed, and started on their retreat southward, having sustained a loss of two hundred killed and left on the field of battle. Four heavy cannon were captured. Colonel Lowe, the leader of the Confederates, was killed. Federal loss, six killed, and forty wounded. The enemy were pursued twenty-two miles by the Federal troops.

General Fremont's forces had advanced southward, and were in the vicinity of Springfield, Missouri. On the 24th, Major Zagoni, of Fremont's Mounted Body Guard, with one hundred and fifty men, made a reconnoissance in the vicinity of Springfield, and found the Confederate troops, amounting to about two thousand men, drawn up in line of battle in the town. The Major determined to have a fight, and in passing through

a lane to reach the enemy, was compelled to throw down several fences while under their fire. When the road was cleared, he charged the enemy with such fury that they broke and run, being completely routed and driven from the town.

The following is the Major's report to the General commanding :

FIVE MILES OUT OF BOLIVAR, }
10 o'clock A. M., Oct. 25. }

GENERAL :—I report, respectfully, that yesterday, at four o'clock P. M., I met in Springfield, about two thousand rebels, formed in line of battle. They gave us a very warm reception, but your guard, with one feeling, made a charge, and in less than three minutes the enemy was completely routed by one hundred and fifty men. We cleared the city of every rebel, and retired, it being near night, and not feeling able to keep the place with so small a force. Major White's command did not participate in the charge. I have seen charges, but such brilliant unanimity and bravery I have never seen, and did not expect. Their war cry, "Fremont and the Union," broke forth like thunder.

(Signed,)

CHARLES ZAGONI,
Major Commanding Body Guard.

From the commencement of the war until the latter part of the summer, Kentucky had maintained a neutral position, or at least her Governor tried to force her into a position so ridiculous. But at two different elections she declared herself loyal by immense majorities, and willing and ready to stand by the Federal Union. During her effort at neutrality, her soil was invaded by the Confederate forces, who established themselves in camps at divers places, and strongly fortified their positions.

On the 6th of September, General Grant took possession of Paducah, on the Ohio river, with a Federal force of about two thousand men. Troops from Indiana and Ohio were sent to the southern part of the State, to circumscribe the opera-

tions of the Confederate General Zollickoffer, who had approached from the State of Tennessee. Generals Buell and Nelson were sent toward the Tennessee line, and placed in command of the Federal forces.

Nothing of importance occurred, except an occasional skirmish, until about the 23d of October, when a sharp engagement took place between a force of Federal troops amounting to about two thousand, under Colonel Gerrard, and a force of Confederate troops about five thousand strong, under General Zollickoffer. Colonel Gerrard was encamped at a place called Camp Wild Cat, and was attacked by Zollickoffer, who made three charges, but was repulsed each time with heavy loss. Finding his efforts to carry the position of the Federal troops by assault unavailing, he retreated, having sustained a loss of about two hundred killed and wounded. Federal loss, thirty killed and wounded.

Kentucky was now firmly attached to the Union, and her borders became the theatre of a bloody war, and many of her brave sons fell defending to the last their homes, and the glorious old flag under whose folds Kentuckians had won fame and glory.

Again we turn to Western Virginia, to find that the Federal arms have been victorious. The town of Romney has become quite prominent in the history of the war, as a point at which there has been considerable fighting. It was captured from the Confederates by the Indiana Volunteers, under command of Colonel Lewis Wallace, on the 11th of June last, but reverted to them upon the withdrawal of General Patterson's division from Virginia. It is situated upon the great Northwestern Virginia turnpike, running from Winchester to Parkersburg, on the Ohio river, being about forty miles west of Winchester, one hundred and ninety-five miles north-west of Richmond, and thirty miles below Cumberland, on the Balti-

more and Ohio Railroad, fifty-eight miles north-west of Manassas Junction, and about ninety miles north of west from Washington. The town was established by law in 1762, and laid out in streets and half-acre lots by its founder, Lord Fairfax. Much of the surrounding country is mountainous and unproductive.

On Friday night, the 25th of October, General Kelly started with a strong force, to attack the Confederate forces entrenched at Romney. New Creek, the point from which the Federal troops marched, is a small village on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, about twenty miles west from Cumberland, and about eighteen miles from Romney.

On Saturday afternoon he came upon the enemy, under the command of Colonel Armstrong, laying behind their intrenchments, waiting the attack. The assault of the Federal troops was furious, and after a defense of two hours the enemy fled, having been completely routed. They left all their wagons, camp equipage, three pieces of cannon, two hundred horses, and four hundred and fifty prisoners. Federal loss—one killed, and five wounded. The town was taken possession of by the United States troops, and strongly fortified.

After the defeat and retreat of Floyd on the 12th of September, General Rosencranz encamped on the Gauley river, naming it Camp Tompkins. As the enemy had destroyed the country bridge, and the bridge of boats, in his retreat after a former engagement, the Federal forces were prevented from pursuing him. On the 1st of November, the enemy returned, and from the opposite side of the river, and near the junction of Gauley and New rivers, opened his batteries on the Federal camp from two points. A number of shells were thrown among the troops, without any serious results. The bombardment continued for two days between the two forces, some of the enemy's batteries being silenced. This engagement par-

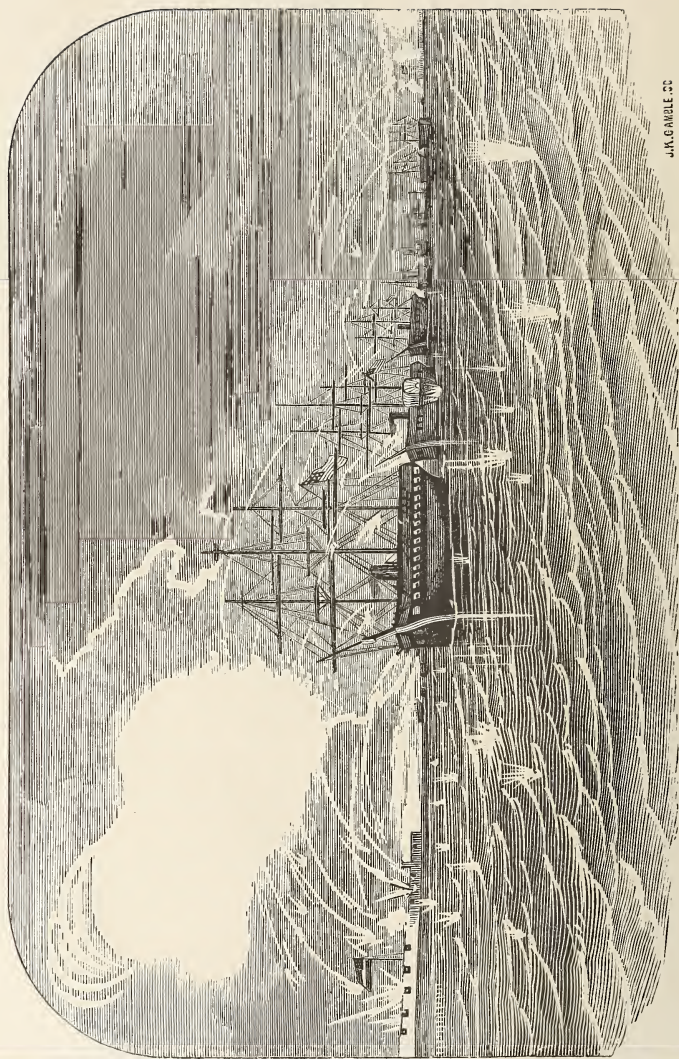
took more of the nature of a reconnoissance and skirmish than a battle. An effort was made to surround and capture the enemy, but he quickly retreated.

On the 7th of November, an expedition started from Cairo, Illinois, under the command of Generals Grant and McClelland, with a force of Federal troops amounting to three thousand five hundred men. The enemy occupied a place called Belmont, in the State of Missouri, and on the west side of the Mississippi river, and opposite Columbus, Kentucky. At the latter place they had an army of twenty thousand men. At Belmont their force was about seven thousand, under the command of General Cheatham, and were strongly intrenched.

The Federal force consisted of the following Illinois Regiments:—Twenty-second, Colonel Dougherty; Twenty-seventh, Colonel Buford; Thirtieth, Colonel Foulks; Thirty-first, Col. Logan; Seventh Iowa Regiment, Colonel Lamon; Taylor's Chicago Artillery, and Döllén's and Delano's Cavalry. They left Cairo on the steamers Alexander Scott, Chancellor, Memphis, and Keystone State, accompanied by the gun-boats Lexington and Tyler. After landing they were formed in line of battle, General McClelland in command of the Cairo troops, and Colonel Dougherty of the Bird's Point troops.

They were encountered by the Confederates, seven thousand strong, and fought every inch of their way to the enemy's camp, making havoc in their ranks. Colonel Buford was the first to plant the Stars and Stripes in the enemy's works. Colonel Dougherty's regiment captured the enemy's battery of twelve pieces, two of which were brought away. Colonel Foulke's men suffered greatly, as they were in front of the batteries before they were taken.

The camp was captured, with all their baggage and stores, and was destroyed by fire. The battle lasted until sundown, when the Federal troops were ready to withdraw. After



J.H. GABLE SC

BOMBARDMENT OF PORT ROYAL.

having destroyed the enemy's camp, it was discovered that they were crossing over from Kentucky, for the purpose of attacking the Federal forces in the rear. The order was given to return to the boats, when the men were attacked by the reinforcement of several thousand from Columbus.

Another severe engagement took place, in which the Federal troops suffered seriously. They retreated, however, in good order, being protected by the guns of the boats. The Federal loss was about three hundred killed and wounded. The loss of the enemy was about three hundred killed and wounded, and one hundred and fifty prisoners.

What object was to be gained by this battle has never officially transpired, nor do we see that any benefit to the Federal cause resulted from it. If it was to capture Belmont, and hold it against the enemy, and occupy it as a Federal post, there was a great lack of management, and a want of proper preparation. When the enemy had been driven out of his works, and he appeared with reinforcements, the victorious forces were compelled to retire from the field of victory with great loss, why not reinforce the Federal troops and hold the position gained? If this was impracticable, why engage in an expedition that must prove unsuccessful, and cost the lives of many good men?

CHAPTER XXVII.

CAPTURE OF FORTS WALKER AND BEAUREGARD AT PORT ROYAL.

On the 23d of October, a large naval expedition sailed from Annapolis, Maryland, for some point on the Southern coast. The naval forces were under the command of Commodore Samuel F. Dupont, senior flag officer. The land forces were under the command of General Thomas W. Sherman. It comprised eight steam and sailing frigates, sixteen steam gunboats, and thirty-four armed steam and sailing transports, mounting in all four hundred guns. The land forces amounted to about fifteen thousand troops, with several thousand seamen.

On Monday, the 4th of November, the fleet rendezvoused off the entrance of Port Royal harbor, on the coast of South Carolina. This point is between Charleston, in the former State, and Savannah, in the State of Georgia; being, by water, forty-nine miles from the former place, and twenty-two from the latter. The weather was boisterous, and the fleet was compelled to lay off the harbor until Thursday, the 7th.

The harbor was protected by two Confederate forts, strongly built, and well mounted with heavy guns. Fort Walker was the largest, and mounted twenty-three guns. Two miles and a half distant, and in a direct line across the channel, was a second fort, mounting eighteen guns, and called Fort Beauregard. This harbor was one of the in-and-out places of the Confederate privateers, and a dodging-in point for vessels running the blockade. When the weather was in proper con-

dition, the vessels of war formed in line of battle, and entered the harbor. We make the following extract from a detailed account of the engagement:—

The wind blew gently from the north-east, and scarcely a ripple disturbed the surface of the water. Early in the morning, the Confederate gun-boats took up their former position at the entrance of the bay, and six large river steamers, supposed to contain troops, passed backward and forward in the offing, occasionally approaching the fortifications on either side. At nine o'clock the signal was given by the Wabash to raise anchor, and in half an hour afterwards all the vessels were under way, the flag-ship leading, and the Susquehanna, Mohican, Seminole, Pawnee and others following according to their size.

The fleet had scarcely got within range of the batteries, when that on Bay Point opened fire, and not more than a minute elapsed before the Hilton Head fortification rained forth a terrible shower. For a few moments, in pursuance of a previously-formed determination not to waste a shot, the Wabash and the rest steamed silently on, receiving their fire, regardless alike of bursting shells, humming projectiles and whirring round-shot, which plunged into the water from a quarter to half a mile away. The distance between the two fortifications is two miles and six-tenths, and the water makes a swift passage through the straits between them.

The current was setting in when the engagement commenced, and as none of the vessels could remain stationary before either battery, unless they had anchors out, it was determined that the forts should be passed, and fired into alternately. Accordingly the vessels entered the bay on the northern side, not more than eight hundred yards from Bay Point battery, into which each delivered fire from its starboard guns. Then they swept around in a circuit of a mile or a mile and a half, and bore down toward Hilton Head, upon which the contents of the port broadsides were thrown. The four larger vessels alone performed this manœuvre, while the remaining eight gun-boats participating in the battle took positions about a mile north of the fortifications, into which they threw unceasingly a destructive enfilading fire.

From my point of observation, on the Atlantic, about three miles from the combatants, the operations, both afloat and ashore, were very well seen by the aid of a powerful telescope belonging to the engineer corps of the expedition.

After the first attack upon Bay Point, during which several ricocheting shells burst plumply within the battery, and others in tree-tops far beyond it, scattering destruction amid the soldiers who were concealed in the vicinity, the vessels comparatively neglected it, allowing it to blaze away with only an occasional rejoinder, while they devoted themselves to extinguishing the fire at Hilton Head.

In describing their circuit and delivering the fire, the steamers, each time, consumed about an hour. As the Wabash came down on the second round, she thundered forth her salutations at a distance of not more than six hundred yards from the battery, and, as her shells exploded, large columns of dust would rise, indicating the point where the fragments struck and ploughed the ground. On the third round, I am told that she approached two hundred yards nearer than before, and made awful havoc, sending shells in various parts of the woods within a range of three miles, in order that the Confederates, supposed to be concealed there, might be driven from their hiding places.

What is true respecting the firing of the Wabash is also the fact regarding the Susquehanna, Mohican, Vandalia, and others. Each vessel discharged her broadside at the shortest possible range, loading and firing probably three times before she passed the battery. I took occasion several times in the early part of the battle to count the number of shots from the fleet and both batteries in a given time. The result on the average showed that for fifteen shots delivered afloat, not more than one was received from shore.

But the enemy was by no means inactive. Some of his guns were rifled, and not one of them was poorly served. The red shirts of their gunners were seen above the parapets of their works during the hottest part of the fight, and the bravery and pluck displayed excited the involuntary encomiums of the spectators. That their marksmanship was good, the torn hulls and cut rigging of our vessels, rather than the number of killed and wounded on board of them, furnish full evidence. Three of their guns seem to have been dismounted almost

simultaneously, when the firing had been in progress three hours; and then, for the first time, was there any wavering on their part. It subsequently was ascertained that the shells which threw over the guns did fearful execution upon the artillerymen, and caused the partial silence of the battery.

The Wabash and other vessels again, for the fourth time, made a detour, while the gun-boats continued to throw in their fierce enfilading fire, which now received but a feeble reply from the fort. By the time that the fleet was again in front of the enemy, he was observed to be vacating his battery. Men were hastening across a meadow to the shelter of a piece of woods, about half a mile in the rear, carrying with them their wounded, baggage, &c. This was precisely a quarter before three o'clock, and in a few moments afterward the Confederates struck their flag, raising a white one upon the staff.

The signal to cease firing was at once given by the flag-ship, which lowered a boat and sent it ashore, carrying a flag of truce at the bow, and our own proud banner at the stern. Captain John Rogers, a passenger on the Wabash, who had come down to join his vessel, the Flag, now blockading off Charleston, volunteered to take the boat ashore, which he did, himself and crew being unarmed; but there was no one there to receive them. No time was lost by the sailors in planting the United States ensign upon the extreme outer parapet of the fortification, while Captain Rogers displayed the beloved emblem of our nationality upon the flag-staff of a building a few rods to the right, from which the Confederate standard had just been taken down.

Who shall describe the enthusiasm with which this glorious victory was received? The minds of the eager spectators of the fight had been in a measure prepared for it by seeing the boat go ashore with the flag of truce, and as soon as our flag was planted upon the parapet, cheer followed cheer from the vessels. Tears of joy filled many eyes, and hands were cordially shaken, and congratulations freely expressed. Some, in the exuberance of their exultation, danced wildly and clapped their hands, until it became a matter of doubt that they would ever cease their antics. The ebullition of patriotic fervor was not decreased in the least when the regimental bands played, with hearty feeling, the "Star Spangled Banner," whose majesty had been so signally vindicated.

The transports had been lying, during the action, with their anchors "hove short," ready to run up with the troops at the first sign of victory. They immediately steamed toward the fort, awakening echoes by the cheers which burst spontaneously from the soldiers, in acknowledgment of the prowess of the navy, as each ship that had been in the battle was passed.

Meantime, Lieutenant Barnes, of the Wabash, had made a landing with his battalion of sailors, whom he stationed as sentinels about the fort, placing his pickets about two hundred feet from the water limit of the work. Everything about the battery, and the encampment to the right of it indicated that its late occupants had decamped in a hurry, probably under the influence of a panic. Not one of the twenty-three guns forming the battery was spiked, and they were all in complete order for defending the place by our troops in case of a land attack, several being loaded. None of the ammunition had been removed or destroyed, and every conceivable thing connected with a military camp could be found lying loosely around. The officers had not taken away their camp furniture, clothing, dress-swords, stores, or baggage of any kind, although a glance at a few of the tents showed them to be in a state of confusion, as if their contents had been overhauled. These tents, both for the officers and men, about eighty in number, were well furnished, floored, and more comfortable in all respects, than those generally used by our own men, and there were abundant evidences that the commissariat was well supplied.

The firing of the enemy was very good, and the vessels suffered considerably. The Federal loss was eight killed, and twenty wounded.

After the surrender of the forts, the Confederate soldiers deserted the country, and the inhabitants of the town of Beaufort and vicinity fled from their homes to the interior of the State. The panic seems to have been terrible, everything that could not be easily carried was left behind. The most princely residences were left to the mercy of the slaves, and many were the grand dances and fandangoes held in magnificent parlors by the slaves.

It was very evident the Southern Confederacy had received a severe blow, and they fully felt its force. They found that the Government they had considered weak and shallow, was strong and deep enough to overwhelm their cherished but wicked schemes with certain ruin. They found, too, that the Yankee soldiers whom they had been taught to regard as cowards and knaves, were true soldiers, brave and valorous.

The Government determined to hold the point gained in South Carolina, and accordingly, General Sherman remained in command of the Federal forces occupying the captured forts, making occasional reconnoissances in the direction of Charleston and Savannah, and alarming the citizens of those two cities with fears of immediate capture.

Beaufort was subsequently occupied by the Federal forces, and the property protected and saved from destruction.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

CAPTURE OF MASON AND SLIDELL—SHELLING OF THE CONFEDERATE TROOPS ON SANTA ROSA ISLAND.

The Southern Confederacy was extremely anxious to send accredited Ministers to the courts of France and England, in the vain hope that their bastard government would receive a recognition from those two nations. Finding that their coast was hermetically sealed, they dispatched James M. Mason, of Virginia, and John Slidell, of Louisiana, as Ministers Plenipotentiary, one to France and the other to England, by way of Tampico, in Mexico, and from thence to Havana, Cuba. There they embarked on board the British mail steamer *Trent*, bound for England. But the vigilant eyes of the officers of the Government were upon them, and scarcely had they taken refuge beneath the flag of Great Britain, than their bright prospects were nipped, and they were taken in custody by Captain Wilkes, of the United States steamer *San Jacinto*. The Captain had received information that the two notorious characters, with their Secretaries, had embarked on the British steamer, and starting in pursuit of the vessel, he overhauled her in the Bahama channel, and with a shot across her bow brought her to. He then sent an officer on board, who demanded that Messrs. Mason and Slidell be surrendered to the United States Government. This demand was reluctantly complied with, but resistance being vain, the would-be Ministers, with trembling steps, were transferred to the United States steamer, bag and baggage, Secretaries and all. Upon

reaching the jurisdiction of the United States, they were transferred to Fort Warren, in Boston harbor. The loyal people hailed this act of Captain Wilkes with delight, and the universal verdict was, he did his duty. But there was another side to the question: how would England regard the act? It was believed she would demand their release, and in case of refusal, a war with the English would be inevitable. Should such a result ensue from the patriotic act of Commodore Wilkes, and should the Federal Government firmly decide to retain the prisoners, the people were ready to shoulder their muskets and open their purses to sustain it. But beneath all this there were legal questions to be considered, that our Government, as a member of the family of nations, was bound to regard.

Had the action of Captain Wilkes been strictly legal, or had he neglected to consummate the act according to international law? But these nice questions of law were not comprehended by the people, and they preferred that the act should be sustained at all hazards.

The news from England was looked for with the greatest anxiety, and when it was known that the English Government had demanded the release of Mason and Slidell, there was one unanimous burst of indignation, and a general desire that the Government would retain them as prisoners. The reply of Secretary Seward was plain, dignified and comprehensive. He reviewed the seizure of the two Ministers upon the principles of international law, and concluded that the act was not in all particulars legal, and was performed without the authority of the Federal Government. Had Captain Wilkes brought the Trent into port as a prize, where the fact whether she had on board contraband of war could have been properly adjudicated, the case would have assumed a more proper and legal character. But the humanity of Captain Wilkes over-

came the strict scruples of law, and not wishing to inconvenience and injure innocent persons, by detaining them on their passage, he suffered the vessel to depart. This made the act illegal, and the Government was compelled, in honor and justice to itself and other nations, to surrender the notorious persons to the jurisdiction of the British flag, from under whose folds they had been taken by the intrepid Captain Wilkes.

When the facts were laid before the people, they concluded that the Government knew best, and if the President believed that the honor of the American people demanded their release, let them depart. Their power had been plucked from them by their capture and imprisonment, and their influence perceptibly diminished. War was avoided, the honor and integrity of the Government preserved, and the people were satisfied.

Never was such confidence manifested by any people in its rulers, as the American people on this occasion displayed in the President and his Secretary. Short as the Administration of Mr. Lincoln had been, he had entwined himself about the hearts of his countrymen, and infused into their minds a confidence unparalleled since the days of Washington, Jefferson and Jackson. Had he said the national honor and safety of the Government demand that these men be retained, though it should involve the nation in a war with Great Britain, not a murmur would have been heard, or a purse-string drawn tight to withhold its aid. The wisdom of the able Secretary of State had steered the Government safely through this impending crisis, and brought it safely into the harbor of peace. War with a powerful nation was avoided, and a death-blow given to the hopes of the rulers of the Southern Confederacy.

The Confederates had been checked in their advance to the heart of Kentucky, by General Nelson's division of the

Federal army in that State. About the 8th of November, he met the Confederates near Piketon, and completely routed them. He then advanced, and a few days after occupied the town.

About the same time, Don Carlos Buell was assigned to command the Department of Kentucky. Shortly after the return of Major Anderson from Fort Sumter, he was made a Brigadier-General, and sent to his native State to command her brave and loyal citizens, but finding his health much impaired by his long confinement in the fort, he was unable to attend to active duties; he therefore retired from active service to recruit his health.

On the 18th of November, General Halleck superseded General Hunter in the command of the Department of Missouri. General Halleck is an educated soldier, and believed to be one of the most efficient and able officers in the United States army.

Returning from the West, we find that an expedition had marched from Maryland into Accomac and Northampton counties of Virginia, more commonly known as the Eastern Shore of Virginia, and found that the Confederate forces had abandoned their works and fled. The citizens who had been forced to take up arms against the United States Government, threw them down, and claimed the protection of the Federal troops. This part of Virginia returned to its loyalty, and the citizens were delighted that they were rid of the oppressions of the usurper.

The Confederate troops, not satisfied with the night attack they made on the camp of Wilson's Zouaves, at Fort Pickens, on the night of October the 9th, secretly occupied the extreme end of Santa Rosa Island, and formed a camp, evidently with the intention of again making an excursion some favorable night upon the Zouaves. By accident, however, their secret

hiding-place was discovered, and Colonel Brown ordered several steamers to shell them off. During the night the steamers moved within easy range, and when the day dawned the enemy were treated to a round of shell and shot. They beat a hasty retreat from the island, and in their rapid departure they suffered a heavy loss.

Returning to the Potomac, we find that the Confederate batteries had been increasing on the Virginia side, until it was officially announced to the Government that the lower Potomac was blockaded. This fact, however, seemed of little consequence to the Government, and the Confederates were permitted to watch their batteries, and in many cases behold vessels proceed boldly past their works, regardless of the shot and shell sent toward them. Occasionally a United States gun-boat would approach within range, and throw a few shells among the enemy's troops.

It was evident that at this time the greatest distress prevailed in the Southern States. Every deserter who came into the Federal lines confirmed this, and every prisoner who was taken complained of the miserable condition of the Confederate army. Their clothing consisted of the poorest material, and of every kind, quality and description, without any effort at uniformity or comfort. Their fare usually consisted of corn bread and bacon; coffee and a few other luxuries being unknown to the common soldiers, shoes and boots were scarce, and in many instances were not possessed by the troops. The Federal soldiers who were confined in Richmond, Virginia, were frequently offered twenty-five dollars for the boots sent them by the Federal Government. Every means were resorted to, to fill the ranks, and men who were suspected of any Union proclivities, were forced into the Confederate army. By drafting and conscription they raised an army of about two hundred thousand men. These

were scattered from the Atlantic Ocean to Texas, and half of them being in the State of Virginia, opposite the Federal lines. At no time had this army advanced beyond its original lines, or made a movement upon the Federal troops and given them battle. Content to lay behind their intrenchments, becoming demoralized and incapable by inactivity, they quietly waited the Federal forces to advance.

CHAPTER XXIX.

PARSON BROWNLOW IN THE FIELD — GENERAL POPE IN MISSOURI.

Although Tennessee had been forced into the Southern Confederacy, by the management and chicanery of her secession leaders, a large portion of her citizens were loyal to the Federal Government. The eastern part of the State had cast a strong majority against the Ordinance of Secession, and were determined not to follow where their bad rulers desired to lead them. A Convention was held for the purpose of establishing a separate State Government, for the avowed object of remaining in the Federal Union. But they were so remote from the Federal aid, that her good purposes were crushed by the Confederate forces brought against them.

The well-known Parson Brownlow, who had fought with his pointed and eccentric eloquence the false and absurd principles of secession, was at length driven from his home, to avoid a long and tedious incarceration. Fleeing to the mountains, he was, for a time, in the commotion of the war, forgotten. Having collected around him about three thousand loyal and brave Tennesseans, he made a descent upon the enemies of his State and his country. About the 1st of December, he attacked the Confederate forces at a place called Morristown, in East Tennessee, and, after a severe engagement, completely routed them.

On the 1st of December, Major Brown, with one hundred cavalry, belonging to General Wyman's Brigade, left Rolla, Missouri, for the purpose of attacking Colonel Freeman, of

the Confederate forces, near a place called Salem. Having reached Salem, he was attacked about three o'clock, on the morning of the 3d, by Colonels Freeman and Turner. The battle was a sharp one, the enemy holding one part of the town, and Major Brown the other. A fierce charge was made by the Federal troops, when the enemy's ranks were broken, and they fled in every direction, sustaining a loss of ten killed, and thirty wounded.

The canal along the upper Potomac river was of much importance to the Federal army, for the conveyance of troops and army stores. About the 8th of December, the enemy resolved to destroy this means of communication, by tearing Dam No. 5 to pieces, by means of artillery.

On Saturday afternoon, a force consisting of a battery of six pieces, about four hundred infantry, and two hundred cavalry, made their appearance on the Virginia side, and commenced throwing shot at the dam and houses on the Maryland shore, burning a barn and riddling all the houses within range. They continued the fire until dusk.

The only Union forces there to oppose the enemy were a company of the Massachusetts Thirteenth Regiment, on picket duty, and an unarmed regiment from Illinois. As the Massachusetts company were armed with the smooth-bore muskets, their fire was ineffective at so great a distance.

Early on Sunday morning the firing with artillery and small arms was resumed, and, emboldened by the slight resistance they met with on Saturday, they came down to the very brink of the river, and exposed themselves without fear.

During the night, Colonel Leonard had dispatched, by canal boats from Williamsport, another company of his regiment, armed with Enfield rifles. This force was concealed as skirmishers along the Maryland shore. On the renewal of the attack on Sunday, the riflemen opened the fire from their con-

cealment, and in a short time the Confederate artillerists were compelled to abandon their battery, the infantry and cavalry retreating about the same time. The enemy's loss was about fifteen or twenty killed, and many wounded.

For want of sufficient infantry force, and a battery to protect their movements, the enemy's guns could not be captured, and after nightfall they returned and removed them. The battery consisted of three Parrott ten-pounders; one twelve-pounder, carrying the Sawyer shell, and two smooth-bore six-pounders. Some of the infantry were armed with improved long-range rifles.

A well-fought battle occurred about the 13th of December, at Allegheny Camp, Pocahontas county, Western Virginia. About two thousand of the enemy, under the command of General Johnson, of Georgia, were strongly intrenched. General Milroy, with about seven hundred and fifty Federal troops, attacked the enemy in his intrenchments. He was first met drawn up in line of battle; but so furious was the attack, that he was driven into his barracks, and five times did he move out, but was quickly driven back. The battle lasted until dark, when the Federal troops withdrew, and lay on their arms all night, intending to renew the attack in the morning. General Johnson, during the night, set fire to his barracks, and retreated to Staunton. By this last blow the enemy were driven entirely out of Western Virginia, and the Federal authority completely established.

Along the line of the upper Potomac, frequent skirmishes occurred between the Federal forces on the Maryland side, and the enemy on the Virginia side. At any point where the Federal lines were weak, the Confederates, with heavy batteries of artillery, would appear, and, as if practicing, or more for amusement, throw shot and shell across the river.

On the 19th of December, the enemy appeared opposite the

Point of Rocks, with a battery of three guns, supported by a force of two hundred infantry. After planting their guns, they commenced shelling Colonel Geary's camp. Six companies were immediately deployed and intrenched as sharpshooters, and the battery of the Twenty-eighth Pennsylvania Regiment opened on them with two guns. The first shot dismounted one of the enemy's guns, and the second dropped among the troops. The Federal battery then advanced, and poured a steady and continuous fire on the enemy, and in a short time silenced all his guns. A fourth gun was sent to reinforce the battery, but soon the whole detachment of Confederate troops were in full retreat, with a loss of fourteen killed, and many wounded. The Federal battery was then turned upon several houses, in which the enemy had taken refuge, and from which they were driven, with a loss of several killed and wounded.

In Kentucky, the military movements of the two armies attracted considerable attention. General Schoepff, who commanded one division of the Federal forces, was skillfully manœuvring to entrap General Zollickoffer, who commanded the enemy, and who was believed to be strongly intrenched on the Cumberland river, near the town of Somerset, on the southern border of Kentucky. The Federal forces were advancing toward the Tennessee line, for the purpose of driving the enemy from Kentucky, and opening a way for the Union army to march into Eastern Tennessee. A second division of the Federal army was advancing through the west of Kentucky, to open a route into Central Tennessee, to aid the Union cause in that section. A large force of the enemy was strongly posted at Bowling Green, and at Green river, and had destroyed the bridges, and obstructed the roads in every direction.

On the 18th of December, a detachment of the enemy had

placed themselves in ambush, near the river, and then sent out a regiment of Texas Cavalry toward the Federal lines. They were met by four companies of the Union soldiers, numbering about three hundred and fifty, and led by Lieutenant-Colonel Van Weber, who drove back the cavalry, following them as they retreated. Suddenly they found themselves in an ambuscade, and surrounded. The Federal troops stood their ground, and vigorously assailed the enemy, until they drove them back, and finally retreated, leaving their dead and wounded on the field. The enemy were about three thousand strong. The battle must have been a desperate and bloody conflict. Lieutenant Sacks, of Cincinnati, killed eight men, with two revolvers, and finally received nine balls in his body, killing him instantly. Sixty-two of the Texas Rangers were killed, including Colonel Ferry, who commanded them. The Federal loss was ten killed, and twenty wounded.

Coming again to Missouri, we find General Pope, with the Federal troops, has not been idle. Ascertaining that the enemy were encamped at a place called Chilhome, Johnson county, and about two thousand two hundred strong in Clinton and Henry counties, he concluded to drop down between the two camps, and disperse or capture them. On the 19th of December, he made a forced march, and so suddenly did he come upon the enemy, that they retreated at his approach, abandoning their camp, baggage, a large quantity of arms, munitions, papers, &c. The enemy retreated toward Rose Hill, in Johnson county. The General sent in pursuit of them ten companies of cavalry, and a section of artillery. They were closely pursued, and, to avoid capture, scattered in all directions. A strong reconnoitering force of cavalry was sent toward Osceola, and intercepted and captured one hundred and fifty of the retreating foe, with all their baggage and horses.

CHAPTER XXX.

BATTLE AT WARRENSBURG, MISSOURI—BATTLE AT DRAINESVILLE—TABLE SHOWING THE STRENGTH OF THE ARMY AND NAVY.

The enemy in Missouri was making strong efforts to sustain itself against the destruction that seemed inevitable. The Federal forces were so alert and persevering, that almost every supply train was captured, and squads of wandering Confederate troops were constantly being taken. The regularity of their movements was broken, and they seemed fearful of a sudden and unexpected battle, or a capture. General Pope had given them much trouble, and was moving so rapidly and surely that they could not for a moment imagine from whence a blow would fall.

Early on the morning of the 20th of December, a scout brought information that a large train and reinforcements of the enemy which had marched South to intercept the Federal forces, had divided, and the larger portion were marching south from Waverly, intending to camp at night near Milford.

General Pope brought the main body of the army in position a few miles south of Waverly, and sent a strong force, under Colonel Jeff. C. Davis, a few miles south of Warrensburg and Knob-Knoster, to come on the left and rear, at the same time ordering Merrill's Cavalry to march from Warrensburg, and come up to the right.

Colonel Davis pushed rapidly forward, and came up to the enemy in the afternoon, drove in his pickets, carried a strongly defended bridge by a vigorous assault, and drove the enemy

into the timber, where, finding himself surrounded, he surrendered twelve hundred men, including two colonels, one lieutenant-colonel, one major and seventeen captains.

On December 29th, General Prentiss, with four hundred and fifty men, encountered and dispersed a body of the enemy, nine hundred strong, under Colonel Dorsey, at Mount Zion, Boone county, killing and wounding one hundred and fifty of them, and capturing thirty-five prisoners, ninety-five horses, and five guns. Federal loss—three killed, and eleven wounded.

Leaving Missouri, we return to the army opposite Washington, where it had lain perfectly quiet from the latter part of July to the 20th of December. During this time no action of importance had taken place, the troops devoting their time to study and drill. The army had now approached a perfection equal to regulars, and in all their reviews had acquitted themselves with honor, and elicited the praise and commendation of officers and citizens.

General McCall's brigade was the reserve of the army, and every pains had been taken by that gallant officer to make it superior in every particular. His camp was located in the vicinity of Drainesville, the town being about half-way between the General's head-quarters and Leesburg.

Having obtained information that a squad of about one hundred Confederate cavalry were foraging near Difficult Creek, and coming within four miles of his lines, he determined to capture or drive them off, and at the same time secure a quantity of forage belonging to some noted secessionists at Drainesville.

On the night of the 20th, he ordered out General Ord's Brigade, with one day's rations, to march at daylight. Easton's battery and four squadrons of cavalry, and forty-five wagons, in charge of Captain Hall, accompanied the expedition. The troops moved on, with instructions to secure the

forage, and after they had departed, he was informed that a large body of the enemy were at Herndon's Station, on the railroad. Knowing General Ord's disposition for fighting, he ordered out General Reynolds' Brigade on the turnpike, as a reserve, and with his staff galloped on toward Drainesville.

In the meantime, General Ord had marched to Drainesville, with his troops in the following order:—Advance-guard, Kane Rifles, Easton's battery, four squadrons of the First Pennsylvania Cavalry, with the Tenth, Sixth and Twelfth Regiments. The regiments were about one hundred rods apart, and as the skirmishers of the Ninth were scouring the woods on the east of Drainesville, they found the enemy secreted in the woods, and the battle commenced.

General Ord was in advance, and at once rode to the spot, and drew up his troops in line of battle. Easton's battery took a position in front of a house, and companies A and N of the Kane Rifles were deployed down the Centreville road. When he had advanced about five hundred yards, seven squadrons of Stuart's Cavalry galloped from one field to another, as though they were retreating.

The Rifles halted for fear of being entrapped, and a battery not a hundred yards in front opened on them. The riflemen dropped down on their faces, and the Kentucky riflemen opened a volley on them. They fell back, and were reinforced by other companies, and then opened a fire on the enemy wherever visible.

Easton's battery now opened on the enemy with three guns—two twenty-four and one twelve-pounder—sending the other gun round the hill, to keep the enemy from outflanking. The enemy's six guns were now pouring out incessant fire, and the Sixth Regiment on his right were firing rapidly at the edge of the woods, where the Confederates were concealed in thick pines. The enemy's shots were generally too high, doing but little damage to the Federal troops.

When the position of the Confederate battery was known Easton opened on him, and his third shell exploded in the caisson, which, in its turn, blew up, scattering destruction in every direction. Just then General McCall and his staff rode up, and he took command. He complimented General Ord for the disposition he had made of the forces, and then proceeded to give orders.

One of the regiments was disposed to fall back out of the field in which they had been placed to get under cover. General McCall rode up, flourishing his sword, and cried out to them, "Forward, boys! stand your ground." The enemy believed the moment was favorable, and down from the extreme left came a regiment in light blue overcoats, with the Stars and Stripes waving over them. One of their officers cried out, "Do not shoot, we are Buck-tails." The troops reserved their fire, until one of the officers discovered the ruse, and shouted, "It's a lie; give them h—ll, boys." Before the words died away, however, the Confederates fired, and started for cover. The Federal troops gave them a volley with fearful effect.

The artillery was now throwing their shells into the woods. The enemy ceased firing from their battery, and were preparing to make a charge. The hail of lead that now rained was terrible, and the order to charge bayonets was given. The General, Ord, and his aids, were at the head of his column, and charged in the following order:—The Ninth Pennsylvania Reserve Regiment, Colonel Jackson; Kane Rifles, Lieutenant-Colonel Kane; and a part of the Sixth Regiment in reserve, with the Tenth and Twelfth Regiments on both wings. On they went, plunged into the woods, and the enemy fled. The troops fired as fast as they could load, and in forty-five minutes from the time the enemy opened fire, they were in full retreat, throwing away guns, overcoats, and everything else that encumbered their flight.

The woods presented a fearful spectacle; the dead and dying lying in heaps, and mangled bodies of horses stretched side by side with their riders. Near the ruins of the battery were seven horses and thirteen men piled together.

The enemy's loss was seventy-nine killed and wounded; two cannons and a quantity of small arms captured. The Federal loss was ten killed, and fifteen wounded.

This was the last battle of any consequence fought in the year 1861, in defense of the Union, and in this the Federal troops were victorious, fighting a concealed foe, and driving him from his lair.

The Federal army was now thoroughly organized, and officered by men who were competent to command. It was now, for the first time since the war began, in a condition to enter upon regular campaigns, and move in regular order. Thus far the war had assumed the form of an irregular contest: captains, colonels and generals fighting a squad of the enemy wherever found, and upon their own responsibility. When, however, we look back to the 15th of April, and find that not a man in the North was armed in defense of the Union, and the navy was small and inefficient, what wonders have the Government achieved? Nothing in the history of the past has a parallel, or even a comparison. The Government, attacked by an internal enemy, who had, by dishonest officials, been armed and equipped from the Federal stores, and for months, unmolested, drilled their troops to overthrow the very Government that was then protecting them. When the blow was struck the Federal Government was crippled; but putting forth its immense powers, it soon recovered from the shock.

Commencing on the 15th of April, 1861, the Government has, up to the close of the year, established the formidable armament given in the following table:—

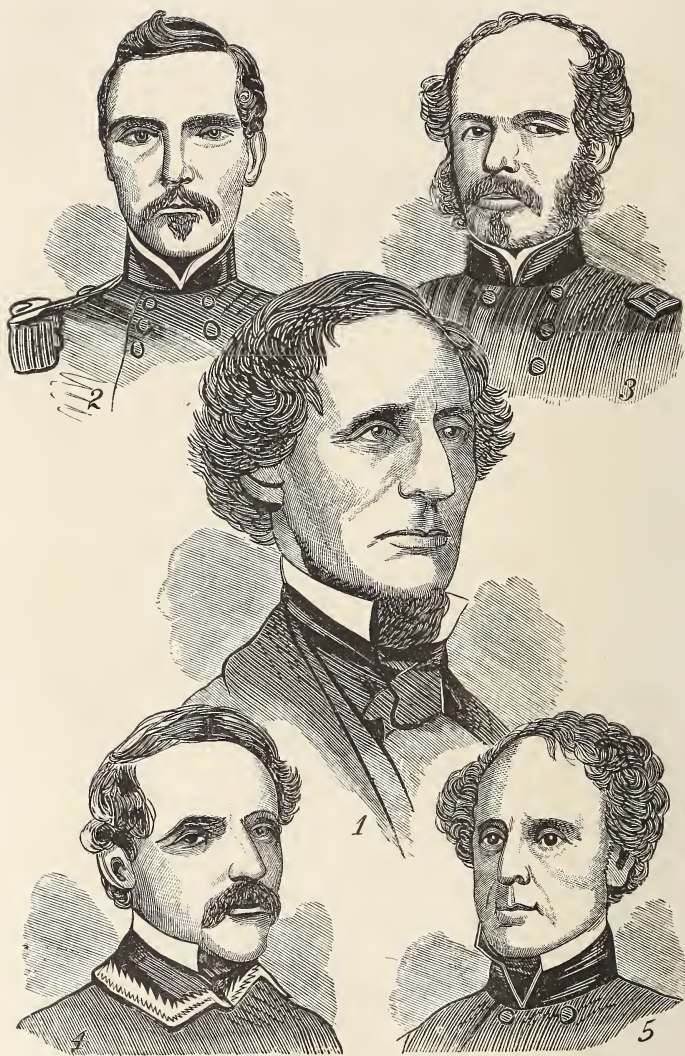
ARMY.

Volunteers.....	640,637
Regulars.....	20,334
Total.....	660,971

NAVY.

The effective force of the navy, not including vessels on the stocks, or unfit for service, was as follows:—

	Sailing Vessels.	Guns.	Steamers.	Guns.
Frigates	6	300	6	222
Sloops.....	17	342	37	326
Brigs.....	2	12	..	..
Small side-wheel.....	..	..	16	56
Iron clad.....	..	..	3	18
Gun-boats, (new).....	..	..	23	92
Gun-boats purchased.....	..	..	79	342
Ships purchased.....	13	52	..	..
Barques purchased.....	18	78	..	..
Brigs purchased.....	2	4	..	..
Schooners purchased.....	24	49	..	..
Total.....	82	837	164	1,055
Total effective vessels.....				246
Total guns.....				1,892
Seamen and marines.....				22,000



No. 1. JEFFERSON DAVIS. No. 2. GEN. BEAUREGARD. No. 3. GEN. JOHNSON.
No. 4. GEN. LEE. No. 5. GEN. FLOYD.

CHAPTER XXXI.

DISBANDING OF HUMPHREY MARSHALL'S FORCES—BATTLE
AT SPRING MILLS, KENTUCKY.

The new year opened propitiously for the Government, and it was plain that the Union was stronger than ever, and that the power of the enemy was broken. The people began to feel that they had a Government equal to the emergency brought upon the country, and that the Government, when properly administered, was a good one. To preserve and sustain it they had put forth all their strength, and with a liberal hand contributed their means. They felt that the movement in the South was not a revolution against invaded rights, but a scheme of evil-minded politicians, who were not willing to relinquish the power they had for years held in their own hands. It was not a war waged against the Southern people, who had been misled and gulled by enormous stories of their political leaders; for, in the minds of the people of the North, there still lingered a feeling of sympathy for their fellow citizens of the South, and as the stories of their distress and suffering circulated, a sigh of pity often followed the recital. There was no word of animosity against the people, as a mass—no feeling of revenge and conquest—no enemy simply because a man was born South. Against the innocent there was no war; but against the guilty there was the most deep-rooted hatred—the most absolute contempt and loathing. To the people of the North, Arnold, though his name blackens the page of history that records his deeds, was a patriot and a good man, when compared with the men who headed the

Southern Confederacy. To those who were willing to return to their loyalty, the hand of fellowship was quickly extended, and those who maintained their loyalty against the foes of the country, they were ready to honor. While, however, those kindly feelings found a resting-place in the hearts of Northern men, there was a determination that the Union should be preserved.

The people were dissatisfied with the operations of the Secretary of War, and murmurs found their way into the press, and eventually reached the ears of the President. They were not loud and threatening, but they portended that in time they might assume a more alarming aspect. The President at once threw aside all personal feeling, all political prejudices and sympathies, and made a change in the War Department. It was a delicate task; for the President and Secretary of War were most intimate friends, and the best of good feeling existed between them. No disagreement had occurred in the Cabinet—no ill-feeling had been engendered by diversity of opinion; but the President, acting upon his own judgment, and with the promptness and firmness that characterized his administration through the year, removed the Secretary of War, and appointed him Minister to Russia. He then delicately informed Mr. Cameron of the change, and the latter willingly accepted it. It was believed that Mr. Cameron asked to be relieved from the secretaryship, though we have no record of the fact.

Immediately following, Mr. Edwin M. Stanton, of Pennsylvania, a Democrat in politics, and the Attorney-General during the latter part of Mr. Buchanan's administration, was appointed to fill the vacant secretaryship. He entered upon the discharge of his duties about the middle of January, and forthwith established strict rules for the government of his Department. Though our record can give him the advantage

of but a few days in his new position, in that short period his operations seemed to meet the fullest expectations of his friends. In every position that Mr. Stanton occupied under the Government, his course was marked as a man of sterling integrity and honesty—not swerving one particle from his strict duty to his Government and his fellow citizens. He declared it to be his intention to reward those first who bravely fought in battle, with the just declaration that they were the most deserving.

At the town of Huntersville, in Western Virginia, the enemy had established a military depot, and collected a large amount of stores. General Milroy, who commanded the Federal forces in the vicinity, resolved to destroy the stores. On the 14th of January, 1862, he sent out an expedition, composed of portions of Ohio and Virginia regiments. The Federal troops came upon a body of the enemy, consisting of cavalry, near the town of Huntersville, drawn up in line of battle. The Union soldiers immediately attacked them, and drove them into the town. For a short time the battle raged, the enemy occupying one end of the town, and the Federal troops the other. A charge was made, and the enemy fled, with a loss of eight killed and wounded. Their stores were captured and entirely destroyed, and the Federal troops then returned to camp.

Southern Kentucky had now become an interesting theatre of the war on which several sharp battles had been fought, with a prospect of heavier ones. A strong line of the enemy was posted along the southern boundary of the State, reaching from the eastern boundary of Tennessee to Columbus, on the Mississippi river. The latter place was strongly intrenched, to guard against any expedition that might attempt to pass down the river. Near Somerset, General Zollickoffer was strongly intrenched, having erected fortifications on high hills.

which completely commanded the passage into Eastern Tennessee. Further to the left, was posted the valiant Humphrey Marshall, a braver man than whom Kentucky never boasted, *as events will show*. The enemy had entertained great hopes of this portly general, and it was expected that, like a whirlwind, he would dash his weight upon the Federal troops, and put them to the rout. He was posted near Sandy Valley, an ominous name, with his troops, waiting the approach of the Federal hosts. On the 11th of January, Colonel Garfield approached the enemy with a small force, and instead of bullets, was met by a flag of truce. The inquiry came from the enemy, commanded by General Humphrey Marshall, to know if the matter could not be settled without a fight. Colonel Garfield very pleasantly gave the enemy his choice to fight or surrender. With this inhuman answer, (no doubt they thought it so,) the bearer of the flag of truce returned to General Marshall. The General thereupon informed his troops that they had no alternative but to disband or surrender, and giving them their choice. They quickly chose the former, and collecting their camp equipage and stores, set fire to them, and departed, scattering in every direction, and every man taking care of himself.

For some weeks, General Zollickoffer had been intrenched at Spring Mill, in the vicinity of Somerset, Kentucky, holding the pass of the Cumberland river, and the route into Eastern and Middle Tennessee, against General Buell. The divisions of General Buell's army laying in the vicinity of the enemy, under Zollickoffer, were under the command of Generals Thomas and Schœpff. As the enemy were strongly intrenched, the generals of the Federal army had been executing several military manœuvres, with a view to surround him, and cut off his retreat, and then storm his intrenchments. With this object in view, Thomas and Schœpff, with their divisions,

were moving in different directions. The enemy perceived the dilemma in which he would be placed, and perhaps mistaking the strength of General Thomas' forces, on Sunday morning, January 19th, marched out, and attacked him.

Below we give the details of the battle, with the march and pursuit of the enemy by General Schœpff's division :—

Last Thursday evening we learned that General Thomas was certainly advancing toward us on the Columbia road. Communication was once more opened up between his forces and those of General Schœpff, by that, the direct route. He was said to be within fifteen miles of us, with three regiments, and others following. General Schœpff at once prepared to co-operate with our friends. On Friday morning the First and Second East Tennessee Regiments marched out on the Columbia road, and were followed by the Twelfth Kentucky. The Seventeenth and Thirty-first Ohio went to Hudson's Ford, near the mouth of Fishing creek, to cut off the enemy should he attempt to retreat on this side of the river, or by that road to throw a force between us and General Thomas. Two pieces of Captain Howitt's battery accompanied us. Captain Standart's battery went with the Tennessee troops. The Thirty-eighth and Thirty-fifth Ohio remained in camp, as a reserve.

After a tiresome march of nine muddy miles, we reached our destination at the lower ford. We found the creek impassable, except by bridging it. The back water of the Cumberland extended nearly two miles further up the creek, which was itself raised by heavy rains. No signs of the enemy were visible. The two regiments, however, took their positions so as to command the stream completely, and bivouacked for the night. Before morning the boys enjoyed the luxury of seeing and feeling a smart shower when there wasn't a cloud in sight. The stars were shining bright as ever through the rain. Our boys think that their next experience of atmospheric varieties in this moist Kentucky will be of rain growing straight up from the ground.

Saturday afternoon the order came to fall back on Somerset. On the way back considerable excitement was created by the sound of sharp musketry across the creek, in the direction of the Columbia Cross Roads. It was the precursor, as we have since learned, of the next day's bloodier work. Late at night our regiment came in tired and hungry. We found that the Thirty-fifth and Thirty-eighth had gone out upon the Columbia road in the morning, had enjoyed the satisfaction of wading the creek, and had then been ordered back to camp.

Sunday morning came, dark and rainy—a fit day for a Sabbath battle. At six minutes before eight o'clock we heard the first boom of cannon. We had frequently heard what we imagined to be artillery firing before, but always found out that it was distant thunder, or something similar in sound; but there was no doubt as to this. The

imagination may mistake other sounds for cannon, but there is little danger of ever mistaking the heavy boom of artillery for anything else. The battle was evidently raging somewhere near General Thomas' camp. Yet it was so unexpected to us that we could scarcely believe the evidence of our own ears. That the enemy should leave his intrenchments to attack us in the open field seemed almost incredible. Major Coffee, of "Wolford's Cavalry," was the only one who could offer any solution of the mystery. He knows Major-General Crittenden personally, and remarked, "George is drunk, as usual, and come out for a fight."

The cannonading continued, with but brief pauses, for two hours, and then ceased. We waited in suspense for two hours more, but no news. The wildest rumors began to circulate. The Confederates had completely surrounded Thomas, and taken his whole force prisoners; but were about to cross Fishing creek, to complete the day's work by demolishing us. The general impression seemed to be that something had gone wrong.

About noon, Lieutenant-Colonel Moore and I went over to headquarters to see if we couldn't get some information. We found Lieutenant Munoz, one of the General's Aids, busily engaged in examining the bottom of a well. He was the only officer visible, and we approached him. No news, was his answer to our question, and still he peered with anxious eyes down the well. It is still a wonder to me what our good friend, the Lieutenant, was looking down there for, though in the dismal condition of external nature, and the general uncertainty which prevailed, it was about as good a thing as a man could do. Probably he was trying to see whether he couldn't get out some of that truth which they say lies hidden in a well, and which is so rare an article in Southern Kentucky.

Just then we saw coming over a hill opposite, at full speed, Major Lawrence, Captain Hewitt, and a third person, with the inevitable Wolford's cavalry blunderbuss slung over his shoulder. He and his horse looked like an incarnation of the demon who may be presumed to preside over mud. If there was one square inch on their several bodies visible through the surrounding crust of earth and water, my eyes failed to perceive it. But his first words were decidedly those of a man of like passions to those of other mortals. "Hurrah, Zolly's dead!" He sought the General, while the Major stopped to tell us that the Confederates were routed, and our men were in full pursuit of them toward the river. In a moment out rushed General Schœpf, bareheaded and jubilant. "Munoz, go and tell the Seventeenth, Thirty-fifth, Thirty-eighth, and Thirty-first to prepare to march instantly." "Instantly," he repeated in his quick, decisive way. We hurried back to camp. The boys had not eaten their dinners yet. They were tired with Saturday's march. They had no meat for breakfast. There were no crackers, only corn meal to make bread of, and no time to prepare it. But it made no difference. The only anxiety was lest Thomas should drive the enemy over the river before we could get down. Boys sick in hospitals hurried out to get their muskets. Our regiment, which could not have brought out three

hundred men for a dress parade, marched five hundred strong to battle, and one company gone to repair the road to Stanford. It was the same with all the rest of the brigade. Colonels Bradley and Vandevier left their sick rooms, where they had been lying dangerously ill for weeks, to head their regiments. I did not see the latter, but Colonel Bradley looked as the Cid Campeador must have done when the Spaniards placed his corpse at their head to lead them once more to victory.

We reached Fishing creek in an hour and a half. It was running breast high and very swift. There was no time to bridge it. A rope was stretched across. The men strapped their cartridge boxes upon their shoulders, and, with one hand holding their gun locks out of the water, and with the other clinging to the rope, to keep themselves from being swept down the stream, they pressed across. All the horses and mules that could be found were put in requisition for ferriage. But it was night before the last man was over. Four miles' march brought us to General Thomas' camp. All along the road we had heard the report of General Zollickoffer's death. The country people, who have suffered from his lawless soldiery, or feared their ravages, were wild with delight. One old woman on the road exclaimed, "I've got two children in the fight, but I don't trouble myself about them, I'm so glad that Zollickoffer is dead. We had disbelieved the reports, knowing how such rumors spread after a battle, but on arriving at the camp we made inquiry, and found that there was no doubt of the fact.

Colonel Connell, who had known General Zollickoffer in Washington, asked to be permitted to see the corpse, and I went with him. He lay in a tent wrapped in an army blanket, his chest and left arm and side exposed. A tall, rather slender man, with thin, brown hair, high forehead, somewhat bald, Roman nose, firm wide mouth, and clean shaved face. A pistol ball had struck him in the breast, a little above the heart, killing him instantly. His face bore no expression such as is usually found on those who fall in battle—no malice, no reckless hate, not even a shadow of physical pain, it was calm, placid, noble. But I have never looked on a countenance so marked with sadness. A deep dejection had settled on it. "The low cares of the mouth" were distinct in the droop at its corners, and the thin cheeks showed the wasting which comes through disappointment and trouble.

After leaving the camp we pushed on our road toward the enemy. We passed through the battle-field in the night. Two corpses lay by the roadside, and our men stumbled over them in the darkness. We could see nothing more at that time.

The road, which had been bad enough before, now became frightful. The boys, worn out with fatigue and hunger, one by one dropped down by the wayside to sleep. Some, stumbling in the mud, were too much exhausted to raise themselves again, and had to be pulled up by their comrades.

About nine o'clock we halted, built fires and lay down to rest until the moon should get far enough up to give us light to travel by. Two hours of rest somewhat refreshed us, and we again passed on. We had

heard heavy cannonading at Mill Spring before dark, and we knew that the morning would either see a bloody fight or a complete retreat of the enemy. It was two o'clock when we reached the camp. More than half of the three regiments which went through that night were dropped on the way. One by one they came straggling in, till by the time we were ready to move in the morning there were but few behind.

Our boys built a few camp fires, and lay down on the damp ground to sleep. I crawled off to a stable, tied my horse, and at first thought of sleeping under him, the only place I could see which seemed available, but Captain Rippey's sharper eyes discovered a box which had once been filled with rye (in its natural state,) untenanted. Fortunately we are short men, and the box just fitted us. There was enough of the grain left to make a comfortable bed, and we enjoyed it.

The morning came, gloomy and threatening, as usual for the last two weeks. Our wagons had not come up with provisions, and we had but a scanty breakfast. The enemy had not been heard from during the night.

About seven o'clock Captain Standart opened with his guns upon a steamboat lying in the river. He soon set it on fire with his shells, and burnt it. We then congratulated ourselves that we had caught the Confederates and cut off their escape.

In a little while a long column of our troops began to file away from a point half a mile below us, toward the Confederate camp. Another formed nearer us, and marched over a hill, through the woods, in the same direction. Then came an order to move, and off we went. We marched half a mile and halted, forming in line of battle. Just then the artillery, which had accompanied the first column, opened again. For a little while we were in doubt whether it was replied to or not, but word soon came that the intrenchments on this side were abandoned, and that we were throwing shell into the fortifications on the other side without waking any one up there. Then we were ordered forward again. In a few moments we were on a hill-top, and the enemy's camp lay before us. A space of more than a hundred acres, surrounded and divided by low hills, all of which were capped by long lines of earthworks. The woods were cut away, and the fallen timber lay in every direction, to hinder the approach of an attacking enemy.

As we marched over the hill into the camp a storm was raging. There was a sullen fall of rain. The lightning leaped from the sky upon the hills on the other side of the river, as though it was pursuing the remains of the Confederate army with the wrath of heaven. The thunder echoed our artillery.

Long columns of our men filed along the circular crests of hills. But there was hardly a cheer. We had hoped to capture every man, and though we had taken everything which made them an army, we felt disappointed. This was peculiarly the case with General Schœpf's brigade, and most particularly with the Seventeenth, and the Thirty-eighth. We had done more hard work, made more marches under the most trying circumstances, thrown up more intrenchments, and in short, had done more of every kind of soldier's duty than any other regiment in the State. We wanted to have a soldier's luxury—a fight.

We had waited for it here nearly two months, and at last, having run the fox to his hole, to have him taken from us by others was too bad.

Yet the victory was complete. Thirteen cannon, more than a thousand stand of arms, a thousand horses, ammunition, baggage trains, commissary stores of every kind, tents, clothing, and, in short, everything which the poor fellows had were left to us. A copy of the order of retreat was found, directing that the army should move at four o'clock, silently, and leave everything. They did not even spike their guns.

No army was ever smitten with such a panic, even in the open field. That they should leave fortifications of the extent and strength of those around their camp seemed almost incredible. Those fortifications were evidently constructed under the supervision of a skillful engineer. It would be difficult to construct more formidable earthworks. They were defended by thirteen pieces, many of them rifled. The force of the enemy, even after their heavy losses in the morning, was fully equal in numbers to our own. Yet all was abandoned.

To our men, accustomed to live in cold tents, the Confederate camp seemed almost a paradise. The most of the regiments were furnished with log huts, warm, comfortable and homelike. In the commissary department they were much better supplied than we have been. No crackers, but good corn bread and biscuit most inviting. Coffee, sugar, beef, fat hogs, everything of the best and plenty of it. The South may be starving, but the Southern army is far from it. In clothing and arms alone our troops have the advantage over them. Their guns were many of them flint lock muskets, shot guns, and squirrel rifles. But few rifled muskets were found.

No sign of the enemy being visible on the other side of the river, and our own stock of provision running short, General Schœppf's brigade was ordered back to Somerset. After traveling about eight miles on our return, we came to the field of battle.

The ground is rolling, the hills not high nor steep, but irregular, and covered, in great part, with dense woods. Along the road there are some cleared fields.

DETAILS OF THE BATTLE.

The enemy, under the immediate command of Major-General Crittenden, marched, eight regiments strong, from their camp on Saturday night. Their mounted grand guards were skirmishing through the greater part of the night with ours. Colonel Wolford's cavalry were doing outpost duty that night, and by their behavior then, and in the battle afterward, completely cleared away the reproach which some unworthy officers have brought upon them. They will always fight well when Wolford is with them. The Tenth Indiana occupied a wooded hill on the right of the road. On the left was a field, stretching down the hill for several hundred yards. In front of the woods was another field of about twenty acres.

The enemy formed in these two fields, attacking the Indiana troops both in front and upon their left flank. A section of Captain Standard's battery had been brought up and was stationed in the road.

The attack here was made about seven o'clock in the morning. Colonel Manson coming up to the position just after the attack began, and seeing that his men must be overpowered before the other regiments could come up, ordered his men to fall back, which they did in good order, fighting as they went. Captain Standart reluctantly gave up the privilege of "giving the enemy one good blizzard" from that point, and retired too.

Immediately to the rear of the woods where the Tenth was stationed is another field, with a steep descent to a ravine, and then comes another dense forest. On the left of the road the clearings continue to the ravine, the sides of which at that point are covered with a growth of scrub oaks and other timber.

After crossing the river another field lies on the left of the road. The Tenth retired through the field on the right of the road, and through the woods for about a hundred and fifty yards to the rear of the ravine. At this point, Colonel Fry's Fourth Kentucky came up and formed along the fence, which separates the road from the field on the left. There is no fence on the right of the road at that point. The two regiments here formed in the shape of a "V," its point toward the enemy advancing from the ravine, behind which they had reformed after their temporary success in the first attack. For nearly an hour they tried to break that "V," but failed.

What Confederate regiments came through the woods to attack the Tenth at this place, I have not learned. Those which attacked Colonel Fry were Battle's Tennessee and the Fifteenth Mississippi, the "Wigfall Rifles," and the "Mississippi Tigers," as they loved to call themselves. These were the crack regiments of the enemy, and they sustained their reputation. Again and again they charged across the field, but were always met by the terrible fire of the Kentucky Fourth, and driven back.

At the point of the "V" died Zollickoffer. He fell nearer our camp than any other man of his army. He was with Battle's regiment, his own home friends, born and brought up around him at Nashville. A short distance from him, to his right, a party of his men had been broken from their comrades, and were herding together like frightened deer. Colonel Fry's men were just about to fire on them. Colonel Fry himself was at the right of his regiment, at the point of greatest danger. General Zollickoffer was on foot and within a few feet of the Colonel. A gum coat concealed his uniform. Seeing the condition of his men, as the Colonel rode up, General Zollickoffer said to Colonel Fry:—"Colonel, you would not fire upon your friends, would you?" Colonel Fry supposed, from the General's manner and remark, that he was one of our own officers, and at once replied: "Certainly not, sir; I have no such intention." He turned and rode a few steps, when one of the General's aids fired at him, wounding his horse. Believing that he was tricked, Colonel Fry at once wheeled and fired at the General. The latter raised his hand to his breast and fell dead. Another ball struck him at the same moment; I believe, in the arm.

Here, too, fell young Baillie Peyton, son of a venerable man, well

known to the nation. Young Peyton, like his father, struggled long against disunion. He was hissed and insulted in the streets last May for telling his love for the old Union.

The death of their General does not seem to have greatly disheartened the enemy. They continued their attacks with as much vehemence as ever. The Second Minnesota regiment came up and formed along the fence, on the left of the Fourth Kentucky. The Confederates still extended their line to flank us on that side. The Eighteenth Mississippi charged up to the fence, and the men in the two regiments fought hand to hand, catching hold of each other's guns, and trying to drag them through and over the fence, but it was all in vain.

THE CHARGE—THE NINTH OHIO AND TENTH INDIANA.

McCook's gallant Dutchmen came up to support the Tenth, forming on the right, and with them driving the enemy out of the woods, over the ravine, up the hill, across the field to the right of the road. The Fourteenth Ohio, which, with the Ninth, had marched all night to get to the battle, together with the two East Tennessee and the Twelfth Kentucky regiments, were coming up. The enemy themselves were in danger of being outflanked and cut off from their retreat. Standart's Battery was in full play, with deadly effect, on their centre. Kinney's and Whitmore's were advancing. There was no help for it, the day was lost to the Confederates, and they must retreat. They were pushed back, flying as they went across the fields. Our deadly Minie balls told fearfully on their ranks; yet the loss was not all theirs. Many of our brave fellows dropped. Colonel Wolford's horse was shot under him, as he charged upon their centre. Bob McCook was wounded, and his horse shot under him. But a bullet through the heart would hardly stop him.

On they went. The enemy is driven through the woods, where, an hour and a half before, they so nearly surrounded the Tenth, the heroes of Rich Mountain. Many regiments are completely broken, and run for the forests on the left. Wood's Alabama regiment breaks for a swamp, and scatters there. It has a home look to them, and is a safer place than the road or the fields. Some regiments act together, and form in a field a mile to the rear of their first position. But Standart's shells, thrown from the hill where the section was so nearly taken, begin to fall among them. They fly again, pursued by our victorious troops. For the third and last time they form, only to be scattered as before.

After this the rout is complete. Panic stricken, they fly in all directions. The pursuit is pressed up to the very intrenchments of the enemy. Two of their pieces have been taken. The third, which they took with them, is only saved to be left behind in their flight across the river. Our cannon open on their camp, our shells falling into their most effective battery, killing four of the men at their guns, and driving the rest away. The darkness of nightfall only prevents a general assault, and our troops lie down, hoping in the morning to complete the good work of that Sabbath, a work they had not sought,

for they were resting that day, preparatory to the attack which General Thomas had intended to make on Monday.

THE FIELD AFTER THE BATTLE—THE CONFEDERATE WOUNDED.

I rode over the battle field in the evening. Our men were burying the dead, but many still lay ghastly where they fell. The wounded had been all taken up. The same kind treatment was extended to the enemy's wounded which was given to our own. The universal remark which they made to me as I passed through the hospital, was, "We never expected to have been treated so. We have been misled. We expected to be served like dogs, should we fall into your hands. You are kinder to us than we would have been to you." The only difference was in the burial of the dead. Those of the enemy were laid together in common pits. Our own were buried in separate graves, and on many of them I saw young cedars already planted by their comrades.

Beside one of the graves prepared for the enemy's killed, I noticed several lying ready to be interred. One poor boy lay in the exact position, as I was told, in which he was found. He rested on his side, his head lying on his right arm, while his left hand was loosely closed on his right elbow. His eyes were closed, and he looked as though he had just fallen asleep.

ON TO TENNESSEE.

I need not tell you how we marched that night, through the horrible mud, nor how our boys have been dropping in all day, worn out with fatigue, disappointed because they had all the labor with none of the glory of victory, and only consoled by the promise that a few days more will see us on the way to Tennessee. There is nothing to oppose us now. Crittenden's army is no longer, and never again will be, an army. Totally demoralized, scattered to the winds, they will go home or be captured piecemeal. We wait only for our provision train and the means of crossing the river.

And now my long and imperfect story of the battle is ended. I fear that I have not given in all things a correct account of it, but I have done my best to do so. If I have given the credit of this, the most decisive victory of the war, to some regiments which properly belongs to others, or have made mistakes in my description of what they all did, I can only say to them that if they will but let me know when they next have a fight, in time for me to be there, I will tell exactly what they do, and give them all full justice.

WHY THEY ATTACKED THOMAS.

It will be a matter of surprise to the whole nation that the Confederates should leave their fortified camp on the river to attack us in the open field. The fact is, they knew that they either had to fight or retreat. General Boyle's brigade had cut off their river communica-

tion with Nashville, and threatened their rear. They knew that General Thomas was advancing on the Columbia road, and that his regiments had necessarily become scattered by reason of the bad roads and high water. They had found out that we had taken possession of Hudson's Ford. They believed that Fishing Creek was so high that General Schœpf's forces could not cross, and were totally unaware of the arrival of the two Tennessee regiments and the Twelfth Kentucky, at General Thomas' camp. In danger of being surrounded completely and starved out, they had either to retreat or do what they did—try to cut us up piecemeal. They thought that they were attacking but three regiments. They made the attempt, and were bitterly foiled. They left on the field of battle one hundred and fifty dead, and as many wounded, besides the many whom they succeeded in sending away before the pursuit became too hot for them. Our loss was thirty-eight killed, and one hundred and thirty-four wounded.

We have followed the details of the war, from its commencement up to the close of January, 1862, and now, as we close this volume of our "History of the Civil War in the United States," we have every reason to believe that the power of the rebellion is broken, and before many months of the present year pass over our country, the war will be terminated, and peace again restored to our borders.

END OF VOLUME ONE.

When events sufficient have accumulated, we will issue a second volume of the work, which, in all probability, will carry the History to the end of the war.

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF EVENTS,

FROM DECEMBER, 1860, TO JANUARY, 1862.

DECEMBER, 1860.

- 20th. Secession of South Carolina.
- 24th. Withdrawal of the South Carolina delegates from Congress.
- 26th. Evacuation of Fort Moultrie by Major Anderson.
- 27th. The Palmetto flag raised in Charleston—Forts Pinckney and Moultrie occupied by State troops.
- 29th. Mr. Floyd tenders his resignation as Secretary of War—President Buchanan accepts it.
- 30th. Arsenals in South Carolina seized by State troops.
- 31st. Exciting session of the Senate—Mr. Benjamin, of Louisiana, delivers a violent secession speech.

JANUARY, 1861.

1st. First symptoms of life in the Buchanan Administration—The frigate Brooklyn and another war vessel ordered to Charleston.

2d. The Legislature of Little Delaware passed a joint resolution in opposition to secession.

Act of Secession passed by Mississippi.

3d. Fort Macon, North Carolina, Fort Wilmington and the United States Arsenal, at Fayetteville, seized by order of Governor Ellis, of North Carolina. United States forts and property seized in Mississippi. Forts Pulaski and Jackson, near Savannah, seized by order of Governor Brown, of Georgia. Fort Pulaski cost \$923,000, and mounts 150 guns; Fort Jackson cost \$80,000, and mounts 14 guns.

The Commissioners of South Carolina left Washington on their return home. The cause of this movement was that the President returned to them a communication which he deemed to be couched in such terms as would not warrant its retention.

4th. This day was devoted to humiliation, fasting and prayer for our national transgressions, in accordance with the recommendation of President Buchanan. Business was almost entirely suspended, and the churches were crowded with worshippers in all parts of the country.

Fort Morgan, in the harbor of Mobile, was taken possession of by

State troops. This fortification cost the Government \$1,212,000, and mounts 132 guns.

The United States Arsenal, at Mobile, was taken by the Alabama State troops. It contained a few arms, 1,500 barrels of powder, 300,000 rounds of musket cartridges, and other munitions of war.

5th. The South Carolina Secession State Convention adjourned, subject to the call of the President.

The Star of the West leaves New York with reinforcements for Fort Sumter.

6th. Extra session of the Legislature of Virginia convened at Richmond.

The State Convention of Alabama met at Montgomery.

State Convention of Mississippi met at Jackson.

Legislature of Tennessee met at Nashville.

8th. Jacob Thompson, of Mississippi, resigned his position as Secretary of the Interior in President Buchanan's Cabinet.

Forts Johnson and Caswell were taken by the State troops of North Carolina.

9th. The steamship Marion, belonging to the line of New York and Charleston steamers, was seized at Charleston by the State authorities.

The steamship Star of the West, Captain McGowan, which had been chartered in New York to convey troops with supplies to Major Anderson at Fort Sumter, was fired into by batteries erected by the State of South Carolina, at the entrance of Charleston harbor. The Star of the West was struck twice, and, being an unarmed vessel, was forced to retire.

The State Convention of Mississippi passed an ordinance for immediate secession, by a vote of eighty-four to fifteen.

10th. Forts St. Philip and Jackson, on the Mississippi river, and Fort Pike, on Lake Pontchartrain, together with the United States Arsenal at Baton Rouge, were seized by the State troops of Louisiana.

The President transmitted a special message to Congress on the affairs of the country.

11th. The Ordinance of Secession passed the State Convention of Alabama, by a vote of sixty-one to thirty-nine.

The Florida State Convention passed the Ordinance of Secession by a vote of sixty-two to seven.

Philip F. Thomas, of Maryland, who was appointed Secretary of the Treasury on the 11th of December, 1860, in place of Howell Cobb, resigned his position, and the President appointed John A. Dix, of New York, in his place.

The steamship Marion, which had been seized at Charleston, by order of the State authorities, was released.

12th. The steamship Star of the West returned to New York, having two shot-holes in her hull, which she received by being fired into in Charleston harbor.

Fort Barrancas and the United States Navy Yard at Pensacola, Florida, were seized by Alabama and Florida troops.

Otho R. Singleton, William Barksdale, Reuben Davis, John McRae, and Lucius Q. C. Lamar, the five members of the House of Representatives from Mississippi, formally withdrew from the Congress of the United States.

15th. The bill for calling a State Convention in Virginia, passed the Senate by a vote of forty-five to one, and the House unanimously.

United States Coast Survey schooner Dana seized by the State of Florida.

17th. Mr. Holt nominated Secretary of War.

19th. The State Convention of Georgia adopted the Secession Ordinance, by yeas, two hundred and eight, nays, eighty-nine.

21st. Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, Benjamin Fitzpatrick, and Clement C. Clay, jr., of Alabama, David L. Yulee, and Stephen R. Mallory, of Florida, formally withdrew from the Senate of the United States.

The Post Office Department discontinued the Post Office at Pensacola, Florida.

George L. Houston, Sydenham Moore, David Clapton, James L. Pugh, S. L. M. Curry, and James A. Stallworth, members of Congress from Alabama, withdrew from the House of Representatives.

23d. Peter E. Love, Martin J. Crawford, Thomas Hardeman, jr., Lucius J. Gartrell, John W. Underwood, James Jackson, and John J. Jones, members of Congress from the State of Georgia, left the House of Representatives. Joshua Hill, also one of the members from Georgia, refused to go with the others, but formally tendered his resignation.

The Louisiana State Convention met at Baton Rouge.

24th. The United States Arsenal at Augusta, Ga., was surrendered to the State authorities.

25th. The Personal Liberty Bill of Rhode Island was repealed.

26th. The Secession Ordinance of Louisiana passed the State Convention by a vote of one hundred and thirteen to seventeen.

27th. The Grand Jury of the District of Columbia presented charges against John B. Floyd, of Virginia, Secretary of War in President Buchanan's Cabinet, for mal-administration in office, and conspiring against the Government.

29th. The revenue-cutter McClellan surrendered at New Orleans, by Captain Breshwood.

The Pacific Railroad Bill passed Congress.

30th. The President signed the bill for the admission of Kansas into the Union, and she became the thirty-fourth State.

31st. The United States Mint and Custom House at New Orleans were seized by the State authorities, and the officials took the oath under the Ordinance of the Secession Convention. In the Mint there was over \$389,000 of Government money, and in the Sub-Treasury nearly \$122,000.

FEBRUARY.

1st. The Texas Convention passed the Ordinance of Secession by a vote of one hundred and sixty-six yeas to seven nays.

2d. Surrender of United States revenue-cutter at Mobile, by Capt. Morrison.

4th. A Peace Conference, consisting of delegates from Virginia, Maryland, Kentucky, Tennessee, North Carolina, New York, Ohio, Missouri, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Indiana, Illinois, Connecticut, New Hampshire, Vermont, Delaware, Rhode Island, and Massachusetts, convened in Washington, and elected ex-President John Tyler, of Virginia, President. The Conference resolved to sit with closed doors.

A Convention of the Seceded States convened at Montgomery, Ala., and elected Howell Cobb President.

Election held in Virginia for delegates to the State Convention. A large majority of the delegates chosen were known as Union men—that is, men opposed to immediate secession. The vote on the question of referring the action of the Convention back to the people, resulted in a majority of 56,000 in favor of reference.

5th. John Slidell and Judah P. Benjamin, United States Senators from Louisiana, withdrew from the Senate.

Miles Taylor, Thomas G. Davidson, and J. M. Landrum, members of Congress from Louisiana, withdrew from the House of Representatives under instructions from the Secession Convention of that State. J. E. Bouligny, the member from the first District, (New Orleans,) announced that he would not obey the instructions of the Convention.

7th. The City of New Orleans was illuminated in honor of secession. The people were out in great crowds, and there was general rejoicing.

8th. The barques Adjuster and D. Colden Murray, brigs W. R. Kibby and Golden Lead, and the schooner Julia A. Hallock, all belonging to citizens of New York, were seized at Savannah by order of the authorities of the State of Georgia. The seizure was a retaliatory measure arising out of the taking of arms in New York, belonging to citizens of Georgia, by the Metropolitan Police.

The Little Rock (Arkansas) Arsenal, containing nine thousand stand of arms, a large amount of ammunition and forty cannon, including Captain Bragg's battery, was surrendered to the State authorities of Arkansas.

9th. The Southern Congress, at Montgomery, Ala., elected Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, President, and Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, Vice-President of the Southern Confederacy, for one year. The Constitution of the United States, with amendments, was adopted.

The vessels seized at Savannah, Ga., were released by order of the Governor, on receipt of intelligence that the arms seized in New York had been given up.

The President approved and signed the Twenty-five Million Loan Bill.

11th. Mr. Lincoln, President elect, leaves Springfield, Illinois, and commences his journey to Washington.

13th. The Congress of the United States counted the votes for President and Vice-President. The following was the result:—

PRESIDENT—Lincoln, 180; Breckinridge, 72; Bell, 39; Douglas, 12.

VICE-PRESIDENT—Hamlin, 180; Lane, 72; Everett, 39; Johnson, 12.

The Virginia State Convention met in Richmond. John Janney was chosen President.

18th. Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, was inaugurated at Montgomery, Alabama, as the President of the Southern Confederacy.

21st. Three more New York vessels, viz: ship Martha J. Ward, barque Adjuster and barque Harold, were seized at Savannah, by order of the Governor of Georgia.

22d. The one hundred and twenty-ninth anniversary of the birthday of General George Washington was celebrated with great pomp and show in nearly all parts of the country.

23d. Abraham Lincoln, President elect, arrived in Washington.

The Secession Ordinance of Texas was voted on by the people, and adopted by 24,000 majority. A very small vote was polled.

25th. Information received of the treason of General Twiggs, in Texas, of the surrender of forts in Texas to the State Government, and also of a large body of United States troops.

27th. The Peace Conference at Washington adjourned *sine die*, after adopting a plan of adjustment.

28th. The following proposed amendment to the Constitution of the United States passed the House of Representatives by a two-thirds vote:—

“That no amendment shall be made to the Constitution which will authorize or give Congress power to abolish or interfere within any State with the domestic institutions thereof, including that of persons held to labor or servitude by the laws of said State.”

Election in North Carolina for delegates to a State Convention, and also to decide the question of holding a convention. The vote on the proposition was as follows:—

Against Convention,	-	-	-	-	-	-	46,603
For Convention,	-	-	-	-	-	-	46,409

MARCH.

1st. The Secretary of War published an official order dismissing General Twiggs from the army “for treachery to the flag of his country, in having surrendered, on demand of the authorities of Texas, the military posts and property of the United States in his department and under his charge.”

2d. Revenue-cutter Dodge seized in Galveston Bay by the State of Texas.

4th. Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois, President elect of the United States, was duly inaugurated in Washington city. Upwards of six hundred Government troops were stationed in the capitol in anticipation of an outbreak; but no disturbance took place.

The Alabama State Convention reassembled in Montgomery, in accordance with a resolution adopted previous to their adjournment.

The amendment to the Constitution, which passed the House of Representatives February 28th, by a two-thirds vote, also passed the Senate.

The Convention of Texas declared the State out of the Union, and Governor Sam Houston issued a proclamation to that effect.

The Arkansas State Convention met and elected Union officers by six majority.

5th. The Senate of the United States, in extra executive session, confirmed the appointments to the Cabinet of President Lincoln.

6th. The Congress of the Southern Confederacy confirmed President Jefferson Davis' Cabinet, which was constituted as follows:—

Secretary of State, Robert Toombs, of Georgia.

Secretary of the Treasury, C. L. Memminger, of South Carolina.

Secretary of War, Leroy P. Walker, of Alabama.

Secretary of the Navy, Stephen R. Mallory, of Florida.

Postmaster-General, J. H. Reagan, of Texas.

Attorney-General, J. P. Benjamin, of Louisiana.

Fort Brown, Texas, surrendered.

7th. The Georgia State Convention reassembled in Savannah.

13th. The State of Alabama ratified the Constitution of the Southern Confederacy, being the first State to do so.

16th. The Provisional Congress of the Confederate States of America adjourned, to meet again in Montgomery, Alabama, on the second Monday in May.

19th. Two New York vessels, which were seized and advertised to be sold in Savannah, were released by order of the Governor of Georgia.

The banks in Philadelphia resumed specie payments.

20th. The Arkansas State Convention adjourned, after passing a resolution to refer the question of secession to the people to be voted upon.

21st. The Alabama State Convention adjourned *sine die*.

26th. The State Convention of Texas passed an ordinance, and the Legislature approved the act, deposing Sam Houston from the executive chair, in consequence of his refusal to take the new oath of allegiance to the Southern Confederacy.

28th. The extra session of the United States Senate adjourned.

APRIL.

1st. The new tariff act of the United States went into operation.

4th. Virginia Convention rejected the Ordinance of Secession by a vote of eighty-nine to forty-five.

The Legislature of Kentucky ratified the amendment to the Constitution of the United States passed by Congress.

5th. A final vote was taken by the South Carolina Convention on the ratification of the permanent Constitution of the Confederate States.

8th. The authorities of South Carolina were notified that the United States would send an unarmed vessel with provisions and supplies for Fort Sumter; reply was made that the vessel would be fired into if it attempted to enter that port.

9th. The State Department declined to receive the Commissioners from the Southern Confederacy.

11th. By order of the Secretary of War of the Southern Confederacy, a demand was made for the surrender of Fort Sumter. Major Anderson replied that his sense of honor and his obligations to the Government prevented a compliance.

12th. Fort Pickens, in Pensacola Bay, Florida, was reinforced by the Government.

At four o'clock, A.M., the batteries and fortifications in Charleston harbor, seventeen in number, opened a fire on Fort Sumter. The fire was returned by Major Anderson, and was kept up on both sides during the day, without much damage being done on either side.

13th. Fort Sumter surrendered to the military force of the Southern Confederacy, after sustaining an attack which lasted thirty-three hours. The garrison was not reinforced. No person was killed on either side, and but few wounded. The frame buildings inside of Fort Sumter were set on fire by hot shot from Fort Moultrie, and entirely consumed. Major Anderson, after the surrender of the fort, was well treated by the Southern army officers and officials, and was highly complimented for his gallantry. The fort was manned by the following force:—

NAMES.	RANK.	Regiment, or Corps.	Original Entry into Service.	Born in.
R. Anderson,	Major,	1st Artillery,	July 1, 1825	Ky.
S. W. Crawford,	Asst. Sur.	Medical Staff,	March 10, 1851	Penna.
Abner Doubleday,	Captain,	1st Artillery,	July 1, 1842	N. Y.
Truman Seymour,	Captain,	1st Artillery,	July 1, 1846	Vt.
Theodore Talbot,	1st Lieut.,	1st Artillery,	May 22, 1847	D. C.
Jeff. C. Davis,	1st Lieut.,	1st Artillery,	June 17, 1848	Ind.
J. N. Hall,	2d Lieut.,	1st Artillery,	July 1, 1849	N. Y.
J. G. Foster,	Captain,	Engineers,	July 1, 1846	N. H.
G. W. Snyder,	1st Lieut.,	Engineers,	July 1, 1856	N. Y.
R. K. Meade,	2d Lieut.,	Engineers,	July 1, 1857	Va.

Officers,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	9
Band,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	15
Artillerists,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	55
Laborers,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	80
Total,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	109

15th. The President of the United States issued a proclamation calling for seventy-five thousand men to maintain the laws of the United States over the seceded States, and calling for an extra session of Congress.

16th. The Ringgold Flying Artillery, of Reading, Pa., Captain James McKnight, 180 men, with four field-pieces, set out for Washington, via Harrisburg, being the first troops to respond to the call of the President.

17th. Governor Letcher, of Virginia, refused to call out the militia of that State, in response to the President's proclamation.

The State Convention of Virginia, in secret session, passed an ordinance, dissolving its connection with the United States Government, by a vote of 88 to 55.

18th. The steamship *Star of the West*, with eight hundred barrels of provisions on board, was seized by the Confederates at Indianola, Texas, and taken to New Orleans.

The Secretary of the Treasury ordered that no clearances should be granted to vessels bound to ports of the United States south of Maryland.

Governor Harris, of Tennessee, refused to furnish troops for the Government.

19. The Government troops of the United States Army, at Harper's Ferry, Virginia, finding their position untenable, destroyed the Arsenal and Armory buildings by fire, together with fifteen thousand stand of arms, and evacuated the place.

A mob in Baltimore attacked the Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts, while passing through the streets of that city on their way to Washington. The soldiers defended themselves, killing eleven and wounding four. Three of the soldiers were killed and eight wounded. The regiment arrived in Washington.

The President of the United States issued a proclamation declaring a blockade of the ports of the United States.

20th. The Baltimore mob tore up the track of the railroad leading out of that city, and burned or otherwise destroyed all the bridges in the vicinity. They also destroyed the telegraph wires.

A portion of the Navy Yard at Gosport, near Norfolk, Va., was blown up and burned, and some of the works destroyed, by the United States officers and troops, to prevent their being used by the secessionists. A number of guns were spiked and sunk in the mud, and the following naval vessels were scuttled and destroyed:—

Names	When and where built.	Tonnage.	Guns.
Pennsylvania,	Philadelphia, 1837,	3,241	120
Columbus,	Washington, 1819,	2,460	80
Delaware,	Gosport, 1820,	2,633	80
New York,	On the stocks,	2,683	84
United States,	Philadelphia, 1797,	1,607	50
Columbia,	Norfolk, 1836,	1,726	50
Raritan,	Philadelphia, 1843,	1,726	50
Merrimac,	Charlestown, 1855,	3,200	40
Plymouth,	Charlestown, 1843,	989	22
Germantown,	Philadelphia, 1846,	909	22
Dolphin,	Brooklyn, N. Y., 1836,	224	4
Total,		21,398	602

The property destroyed was estimated to be worth twenty-five millions of dollars. It was the intention to have destroyed all the Government works, but some of the fuses failed to ignite the powder, and the Confederates, in consequence, saved the most valuable part of the Navy Yard, together with about fifteen hundred cannon.

21st. United States Branch Mint at Charlotte, N. C., seized by the State authorities. Excitement at Baltimore in consequence of rumors that Pennsylvania troops had reached Cockeysville, Md., and that the garrison at Fort McHenry was prepared to shell the city.

22d. United States Arsenal at Fayetteville, N. C., surrendered to the State of North Carolina. United States military supplies seized at Napoleon, Arkansas, by order of the Government of the State.

23d. Martial law was proclaimed in Baltimore.

24th. A portion of the railroad track between Annapolis, Md., and Washington, was torn up by secession mobs, and the troops *en route* for the Federal capitol detained at the former place.

25th. The railroad bridges over Bush river and Gunpowder river were destroyed by a Maryland mob.

Colonel Van Dorn, of Texas, captured 450 United States troops at Saluria. Fort Smith, Arkansas, taken possession of by State troops, under Colonel Solon Borland. General Harney arrested at Harper's Ferry, in Virginia, but afterwards released. Illinois Volunteers visited the United States Arsenal at St. Louis, and carried off a large amount of munitions of war to secure them from the secessionists. Governor Letcher, of Virginia, issued a proclamation, announcing that the State had been transferred to the Southern Confederacy.

27th. The Annapolis and Washington Railroad partially repaired, and troops carried to the Federal capital.

The President of the United States issued another proclamation, ordering the ports of Virginia and North Carolina to be blockaded.

Governor Joseph E. Brown, of Georgia, issued a proclamation prohibiting the payment by citizens of that State of all debts to Northern creditors.

29th. The Congress of the Confederate States met in extra session at Montgomery, Ala.

30th. The House of Delegates of Maryland defeated an Ordinance of Secession by a vote of thirteen for secession and fifty-three against it.

MAY.

2d. Judge Campbell, of Alabama, one of the Judges of the United States Supreme Court, resigned.

3d. The President of the United States issued a proclamation calling for 42,000 additional volunteers, 22,000 additional regulars, and 18,000 additional seamen.

4th. Governor Curtin, of Pennsylvania; Governor Dennison, of Ohio; Governor Randall, of Wisconsin; Governor Blair, of Michigan; Governor Morton, of Indiana, and Ex-Governor Kearney, of Illinois, met at Cleveland, Ohio, to devise plans for the defense of the Western States.

5th. The Fifty-second Regiment of New York, and the Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts, took possession of the Relay House, or Washington Junction, on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, nine miles from Baltimore.

A formal declaration of war against the United States was passed by the Congress of the Confederate States.

6th. The Arkansas State Convention passed an Ordinance of Secession by a vote of sixty-nine to one.

Captain Nathaniel Lyon, United States Army, in possession of the Arsenal at St. Louis, required by the Police Commissioners of that city to remove United States troops from all places outside the Arsenal grounds. The demand was refused.

The Legislature of Tennessee passed an Ordinance of Secession, which was termed a Declaration of Independence, and ordered it to be voted upon by the people. It passed the Senate by twenty to four, and the House by forty-six to twenty-one.

7th. Governor Harris, of Tennessee, made a treaty putting the whole military force of the State under the control of the Confederacy.

9th. Four hundred and twenty United States Regulars, a company of United States Artillery, with Sherman's Battery, and the Philadelphia Artillery Regiment, Colonel F. E. Patterson, (Seventeenth of the line,) marched through Baltimore—the first troops since the attack on the Massachusetts Regiment.

A detachment of the Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts, quartered at the Relay House, captured the Winans steam gun. It was being conveyed from Baltimore to Harper's Ferry, for the purpose of using it against the Government forces.

10th. A brigade, consisting of eight hundred men, fully armed and equipped, who were encamped on the outskirts of St. Louis, awaiting orders for a hostile movement against the Government, surrendered unconditionally to the United States forces under the command of Captain Lyon.

An attack was made on Government recruits in St. Louis by a mob. The soldiers fired upon the party, and twenty persons were killed, including two women and several children.

The route through Baltimore was opened, and Government troops passed through that city unmolested.

The President of the United States issued a proclamation directing the commander of the forces of the United States on the Florida coast to permit no persons to exercise any office or authority upon the islands of Key West, the Tortugas and Santa Rosa, which may be inconsistent with the laws and Constitution of the United States; authorizing him to suspend there the writ of habeas corpus, and to remove from the vicinity of the United States fortresses all dangerous or suspected persons.

11th. Government troops were again attacked by rioters in St. Louis. The soldiers fired upon the crowd, killing four persons, and wounding some eight or ten.

13th. A Convention of Delegates from the counties of Virginia lying west of the Allegheny mountains, met in Wheeling.

Resumption of the interrupted communication with Washington via Baltimore. Baltimore occupied by Federal troops, under General Butler.

The blockade of the Mississippi river was effectually established at Cairo, Illinois.

14th. The United States mail between St. Louis and Memphis was stopped by order of the Postmaster-General, in consequence of interruptions made by the secessionists.

Governor Hicks, of Maryland, issued a proclamation calling for four regiments of volunteers, in response to the demand of the President of the United States.

Ross Winans arrested at the Relay House.

15th. The Wheeling, Va., Convention, after passing resolutions strongly in favor of the Union, and recommending a division of the State, adjourned.

Proclamation of Neutrality issued by Queen Victoria.

17th. The Confederate Congress at Montgomery, Ala., authorized the issue of Confederate bonds to the amount of fifty millions of dollars.

18th. A Confederate battery at Sewall's Point, Hampton Roads, was attacked by two Government armed vessels and dislodged. This was the first offensive operation of the Government against the Confederates.

The Confederate Congress passed laws abolishing the Mints at New Orleans and Dahlonega, Ga., and authorizing the issue of fifty millions of bonds, payable in twenty years, at eight per cent. interest, or, in lieu thereof, twenty millions Treasury notes in small sums, without interest.

20th. An order was issued by Postmaster-General Blair, to cut off all the steamship mails on the coast, and all the steamboat mails on

the rivers having any connection whatever with the Confederate States.

By orders from the Government authorities all the telegraphic dispatches which had passed through the free States, for several months past, were seized simultaneously—the object being to ascertain who had been giving aid and comfort to the enemy.

Governor Magoffin, of Kentucky, issued a proclamation, declaring that that State should remain neutral, and forbidding the march of troops from either section into or across the State.

21st. The Confederates established a blockade of the Mississippi river at Memphis, Tenn.

The State Convention of North Carolina passed an Ordinance of Secession unanimously.

The Confederate Congress at Montgomery, adjourned to meet at Richmond, Virginia, on the 20th of July.

24th. About thirteen thousand Federal troops, before daylight in the morning, marched over from the District of Columbia into Virginia, and took possession of Arlington Heights and the city of Alexandria. The Confederate troops evacuated, and no fighting took place. Colonel Elmer E. Ellsworth, commander of the New York Fire Zouaves, was shot and instantly killed, in Alexandria, by a man named James Jackson, proprietor of the Marshall House. Jackson was shot through the head and killed by one of Colonel Ellsworth's Corporals, named Brownell.

25th. The bids for a loan of \$8,994,008 asked for by the Secretary of the Treasury were opened at the Department in Washington. The Secretary decided to accept all bids for bonds placed at eighty-five and upwards, and award the remainder to bidders for Treasury notes at and above par. Under these decisions there were awarded :—

For bonds,	-	-	-	-	-	\$6,753,000
For Treasury notes,	-	-	-	-	-	2,241,000
Total,	-	-	-	-	-	\$8,994,000

Making the average rate of interest payable by the Government a fraction under seven per cent.

26th. The port of New Orleans was blockaded by the sloop-of-war Brooklyn.

27th. About one hundred slaves escaped from their masters in Virginia, and took refuge in Fortress Monroe. General Butler declared them prizes and refused to restore them.

The port of Mobile was blockaded. All the principal ports in the Southern seceded States blockaded.

Occupation of Newport News by General Butler.

A writ of habeas corpus issued by Chief Justice Taney for the body of John Merryman, confined upon a charge of treason, in Fort McHenry. General Cadwalader, in command at Baltimore, refused to obey the writ, by order of the President.

30th. Grafton, Virginia, occupied by Virginia and Ohio troops, under Colonel Kelley.

31st. An engagement took place between three Government gunboats and some Confederate batteries at Aquia Creek, Virginia, which lasted two hours. The batteries were silenced. Only one man injured on the vessels.

A company of the Second Cavalry left their camp and entered the village of Fairfax Court House, Virginia, where some four hundred Confederate troops were quartered. A skirmish took place, in which the cavalry lost one man killed, one missing, and four wounded. A number of the enemy were killed and five taken prisoners.

JUNE.

1st. The postal arrangements of the Southern Confederacy went into operation.

All United States postal service in the States of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Florida, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, Arkansas and Texas, was suspended.

3d. The privateer Savannah, Captain Baker, captured by the United States brig Perry, off the coast of South Carolina.

A body of fifteen hundred Confederates, encamped at Phillippi, Va., was routed by Government volunteers from Ohio and Indiana. Col. Benjamin F. Kelley was shot by a concealed Confederate and severely wounded.

General Beauregard arrived at Manassas Junction, Va., and assumed command of the Confederate forces.

6th. The United States steamer Harriet Lane engaged a Confederate battery at Pig Point, Va., on the Potomac river. Five of her crew were wounded.

7th. General Patterson's army corps commenced its march toward Virginia, from Chambersburg, Brigadier-General Thomas leading the advance.

8th. The bridges over the Potomac at Point of Rocks and Berlin, were burned by order of the Confederate General Lee. Also, burned the same day four bridges on the Alexandria, Loudon and Hampshire Railroad.

10th. Three regiments were ordered from Hampton, Va., to attack a Confederate battery at Big Bethel, about ten miles distant. The regiments started in the night, one about two hours in advance of the others. When they met they mistook each other for the enemy, and commenced firing. Before the mistake was found out two men were killed, and nineteen wounded, and the firing, which was heard by the enemy, gave them time to prepare for the attack. The assault was made in the face of a battery of eight or ten guns, managed by near two thousand Confederates, and after a fight of two hours the Government troops were forced to retire, with the loss of fourteen killed, and forty-five wounded and missing. The loss of the enemy was not known. Among the killed was Lieutenant Greble, United States army, in command of the artillery, and Major Theodore Winthrop.

12th. The Union troops drove the Confederates out of the village of Romney, Va. The enemy lost two killed, and one wounded.

Governor Jackson, of Missouri, issued a proclamation calling out fifty thousand men to resist the Federal Government.

14th. The railroad bridge across the Potomac river at Harper's Ferry, Va., was blown up and entirely destroyed by the Confederate forces stationed there, and a large body of the troops left the place.

Another street fight took place in St. Louis, during which six Confederates were killed by the Union soldiers.

15th. The last of the Confederate forces left Harper's Ferry, and the place was taken possession of by Union troops.

Jefferson City, the capital of Missouri, was taken possession of by Union troops, and the State officers, being all secessionists, fled.

17th. An ordinance was passed unanimously by the Wheeling, Virginia, Convention, declaring all acts of the Richmond Convention null, and deposing the old State officers.

A train of cars, containing three companies of Colonel McCook's Ohio Regiment, was fired into by a masked battery, near Vienna, Va. Nine of the party were killed, and twelve wounded and missing.

18th. An engagement took place at Boonville, Missouri, between the Confederate State troops and the Government forces, under General Lyon, in which the Union soldiers were signally victorious. The loss of the Government troops was four killed, and nine wounded. The Confederate loss was fifteen killed, and twenty wounded.

A skirmish took place at Edwards' Ferry.

A detachment of Union forces encountered the Confederates at Cole, Missouri. Fifteen of the enemy were killed, twenty wounded, and thirty were taken prisoners.

19th. The Wheeling Convention passed an ordinance reorganizing the State Government.

20th. Frank H. Pierpont, of Marion county, was chosen Governor, and Daniel Palsly, of Mason county, elected Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia, by the Wheeling Union Convention.

23d. Forty-eight locomotives, valued at four hundred thousand dollars, belonging to the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad Company, were destroyed at Martinsburg, Va., by the Confederates.

24th. A riot occurred at Milwaukee, Wisconsin, caused by the banking houses of that city refusing to receive the bills of certain banks of the State, by which the currency became suddenly very much depreciated.

26th. A skirmish took place at Patterson's creek, Va. The Confederates were routed with a loss of thirty killed and wounded.

27th. Major-General Banks, commanding the Department of Annapolis, issued a proclamation, announcing the arrest and confinement, in Fort McHenry, of George P. Kane, Chief of Police of Baltimore, on a charge of treason, and appointing Colonel Kenley, Provost Marshal.

An engagement took place at Matthias Point, Va., between the gun-boats Pawnee and Freeborn, and a large number of Confederates on shore, during which Captain James H. Ward, commander of the Chesapeake Bay Flotilla, was killed, and eight seamen wounded.

The East Tennessee Union Convention met at Knoxville, Hon. Thomas A. R. Nelson in the chair.

28th. Skirmish at Falls Church, Va. One Union man was killed, and the Confederates lost two.

Skirmish at Shooter's Hill, Va. One killed, and one wounded on the Union side. Two Confederates killed.

JULY.

1st. The late members of the Board of Police of Baltimore, Messrs. Charles Howard, William Gatchell, Charles Hinks, and John W. Davis, were arrested by order of Major-General Banks, and confined in Fort McHenry.

An engagement took place at Haynesville, Va.

Skirmish at Farmington, Missouri, five Confederates killed.

Engagement at Buckhannon, Va., in which the Confederates lost twenty-three killed and wounded, and two hundred prisoners.

The Confederates were routed at Falling Waters, Va.

2d. General Patterson's division of the Union army crossed the Potomac into Virginia at Williamsport, and a short engagement took place between two of the regiments and three thousand five hundred Confederate forces, under Colonel Jackson. The enemy, after half an hour's fighting, retreated. The Union loss was three killed, and fifteen wounded. The Confederate loss was not known, but they left eight dead on the field.

The new Legislature of Virginia met and organized at Wheeling, and the new State Government was recognized by the United States Government.

3d. A company of Confederates was captured at Neosho, Missouri.

4th. The Thirty-seventh Congress assembled in extra session. Eleven Seceded States were unrepresented, except three Representatives from Virginia, and one Senator from Tennessee. Galusha A. Grow, (Rep.) of Pennsylvania, was elected Speaker. Emerson Etheridge, of Tennessee, was elected Clerk.

5th. The President's message was delivered to both houses of Congress. The President called for four hundred thousand men, and four hundred millions of dollars, to aid in putting down the rebellion in the South.

A scouting party, numbering about one thousand one hundred, under command of Colonel Seigel, encountered four or five thousand Confederate troops, under Governor Jackson, near Carthage, Missouri. A brisk engagement took place, which lasted nearly two hours. Col. Seigel was forced to retire; but in their retreat they kept up a continual fire from their artillery, and the enemy sustained a loss of between four and five hundred, while the Union loss was only ten killed, and forty-three wounded.

8th. A skirmish took place at Bird's Point, Missouri, in which the Confederates lost three killed, and eight wounded.

The Confederates were routed at Bealington, Va.

An attack was made on a Confederate camp at Florida, Missouri, which was broken up.

9th. The new Legislature of Virginia, which held its session in Wheeling, elected James S. Carlisle to the United States Senate, in place of R. M. T. Hunter, and Waitman T. Willey, in place of James M. Mason.

10th. A portion of General McClellan's forces, stationed near Buckhannon, Va., had a skirmish with the advance posts of General Johnson's command at Laurel Hill, which lasted nearly the entire day.

11th. The Senate of the United States expelled Senators James M. Mason, and R. M. T. Hunter, of Virginia; Thomas L. Clingman, and Thomas Bragg, of North Carolina; Louis T. Wigfall, and J. W. Hemp-hill, of Texas; Charles B. Mitchell, and William K. Sebastian, of Alabama, and A. O. P. Nicholson, of Tennessee.

A battle was fought at Rich Mountain, two miles east of Roaring Run, Virginia, where the enemy, numbering about three thousand men, in command of Colonel Pegram, were strongly intrenched. About three o'clock in the morning, General Rosencranz, with a portion of the Eighth, Tenth, and Thirteenth Indiana, and Nineteenth Ohio Regiments, belonging to General McClellan's division, after a very difficult march of seven or eight miles, cutting a road through the woods, succeeded in surrounding the enemy at about three o'clock in the afternoon. A desperate fight immediately ensued, lasting about an hour and a half, resulting in a loss of one hundred and thirty-five of the enemy. They retreated precipitately, leaving behind six cannon, a large number of horses, wagons, camp equipage, &c. The loss on the Union side was about twenty killed, and forty wounded.

12th. General McClellan took possession of Beverly, Va. He had in his possession six brass cannon, a large quantity of camp equipage, and two hundred tents, all taken from the Confederates. Colonel Pegram, in command of six hundred Confederate troops, surrendered his whole force.

Skirmish at Newport News, Va. Twelve Union men taken prisoners. The Confederates were routed at Barboursville, Va.

13th. The column under command of General Morris, belonging to General McClellan's division, came up to the retreating Confederate forces, commanded by General Garnet, near St. George, Va. A sharp conflict ensued, and the Confederate troops were routed, and General Garnet killed. The Union loss was thirteen killed, and forty wounded. The enemy's loss was two hundred killed and wounded, and a large number taken prisoners.

John B. Clark, member of the United States House of Representatives from the Third District of Missouri, was expelled from that body, by a vote of ninety-four to forty-five.

15th. The Potomac division of the army of the Union, forty thou-

sand strong, under command of General McDowell, moved from their encampments in and around Washington and Arlington Heights, toward Fairfax Court House, in Virginia.

A Rhode Island battery and the Twenty-first and Twenty-third Pennsylvania Regiments routed six hundred Confederate cavalry belonging to General Johnston's command, at Bunker Hill, Va.

16th. The Confederate scouts and pickets were driven beyond Fairfax Court House by the Union army.

17th. The Union army continued their march toward Fairfax Court House.

18th. General McDowell, with his forces, arrived at Fairfax Court House. An engagement took place at Blackburn Ford, Bull Run, in which one hundred of the enemy were killed and wounded. General Tyler led the Union troops.

20th. The Union army moved from Fairfax Court House and vicinity toward Manassas Junction.

The Confederate Congress assembled at Richmond.

The Confederate forces, under Henry A. Wise, fled from the Valley of the Big Kanawha, on the approach of the Union troops.

Sunday, 21st. General McDowell's Division of the Union army engaged the Confederates, under General Beauregard, at Stone Bridge, Bull Run, three miles from Manassas Junction, a second time, and after a desperate fight, continuing nearly twelve hours, the Government troops retired, and fell back to Arlington Heights.

22d. General McClellan was assigned to the entire command of the military department of the Potomac, including the city of Washington, superseding General McDowell on one side, and General Mansfield on the other.

25th. A slight skirmish took place at Harrisonville, Virginia, in which the Confederates lost six killed.

26th. The Union troops occupied Forsyth, Missouri.

29th. Robert Toombs, of Georgia, resigned his position as Secretary of State in Jeff. Davis' Cabinet, and Robert M. T. Hunter, of Virginia, was chosen in his place.

The Southern Bank Convention, which held its second session in Richmond, adjourned, after advising the Confederate Government to issue \$100,000,000 Treasury notes.

30th. The Missouri State Convention declared vacant the offices of Governor, Lieutenant-Governor and Secretary of State, by a vote of 56 to 25. The seats of the members of the Legislature were also declared vacant. The State officers and a majority of the members of the Legislature were secessionists.

31st. The Missouri Convention elected Hamilton R. Gamble to the office of Governor, Willard P. Hall, Lieutenant-Governor, and Mordecai Oliver, Secretary of State, all Union men.

AUGUST.

2d. A battle occurred at Dug Spring, nineteen miles south of Springfield, Missouri, between the Union forces under General Lyon, and the Confederate troops under Ben McCulloch, in which eight of the former were killed, and thirty wounded; and forty of the latter were killed, and forty-four wounded.

Fort Fillmore, in Texas, surrendered by Major Lynde. Seven hundred and fifty United States troops were taken prisoners.

3d. Some of the vessels of the blockading fleet threw a few bombs into Galveston.

A skirmish took place at Point of Rocks, Va. Only one Union soldier was wounded.

A battle was fought at Athens, Missouri, and the Confederates were routed.

6th. The special session of the Thirty-seventh Congress adjourned *sine die*, after a sitting of thirty-three days.

A party of Confederate troops, under the command of Magruder, set on fire and destroyed the village of Hampton, Virginia, with the exception of some five or six buildings on the outskirts of the town.

The Confederates were routed at Lovettsville, Virginia.

9th. An attack was made on the Confederates at Potosi, Missouri.

10th. A battle took place at Davis' Creek, about twelve miles from Springfield, Missouri, between five thousand two hundred Union troops, under General Lyon, and fifteen thousand Confederates, under Ben McCulloch and General Price, which lasted about six hours. The Confederates were driven from their position, and were forced to burn their baggage and camp equipments, to keep them from falling into the hands of the Union forces. During the engagement, General Lyon was killed, and the Union loss was two hundred and twenty three killed, seven hundred and twenty-one wounded, and two hundred and ninety-one missing. The loss of the enemy was not known, but was supposed to be nearly double that number.

11th. Twenty-two Confederate prisoners were captured at Georgetown, Missouri.

13th. Grafton, Virginia, occupied by the Union forces

During a skirmish at Matthias Point, Virginia, the Unionists lost three killed, and one wounded.

14th. Martial law was declared in St. Louis by Major-General Fremont.

16th. The President of the United States issued a proclamation ordering all commercial intercourse between the North and the seceded States to cease.

The Confederate camp at Fredericktown, Missouri, was attacked, and twelve of the enemy were taken prisoners.

A boat's crew of the Union steamer *Resolute* was fired on by a Confederate battery at Acquia Creek, Virginia; three were killed, and one wounded.

18th. Major-General John E. Wool assumed command at Fortress Monroe.

A fight took place at Charlestown, Missouri.

A slight skirmish occurred at Lady's Fork, Virginia.

19th. The Secretary of War issued an order calling upon the Governors of the Northern States to send immediately to Washington all regiments and parts of regiments in their respective States.

The State Department in Washington issued a notice, setting forth that no person would be allowed to go abroad from a port of the United States without a passport either from that department, or countersigned by the Secretary of State, nor would any person be allowed to land in the United States without a passport from a minister or a consul of the United States; or, if a foreigner, from his own Government, countersigned by some minister or consul.

20th. A skirmish took place at Hawk's Nest, in the Kanawha Valley, Virginia. Four thousand Confederates attacked the barricades of the Eleventh Ohio Regiment, and were driven back, with the loss of fifty killed. Only two Union men were wounded.

Six hundred troops, under Colonel Dougherty, left Bird's Point, and proceeded out to Charlestown, Missouri, attacked twelve hundred Confederates at that place, and completely routed them, and drove them from the town.

The Wheeling Convention passed an ordinance erecting a new State, to be called Kanawha, by a vote of fifty to twenty-eight.

21st. A skirmish occurred at Cross Lanes, Virginia.

24th. J. G. Berret, Mayor of Washington city, was arrested on a charge of treason, and conveyed a prisoner to Fort Lafayette, in New York harbor.

26th. The Seventh Ohio Regiment, Colonel Tyler, was surrounded by a Confederate army at Summersville, Virginia, and attacked on both flanks and in the front simultaneously. The men immediately formed for battle, and fought bravely, while they saw but little chance of success, the enemy proving too powerful. The Union forces scattered after cutting their way through, but soon formed again, and fired, but received no reply or pursuit from the enemy.

A naval expedition sailed from Fortress Monroe, under the command of Flag-officer Stringham, of the navy, and General Butler, of the army. The vessels carried over one hundred guns, and about nine hundred men.

29th. The naval expedition which left Fortress Monroe on the 26th, after a severe bombardment, captured two forts, known as Fort Hatteras and Fort Clark, at Hatteras Inlet, on the coast of North Carolina. Fort Hatteras mounted twenty thirty-two-pounders, and Fort Clark five thirty-two-pounders. Eight Confederates were killed, and twenty-five wounded, while the expedition lost not a man. Forty-five Confederate officers, and six hundred and sixty-five non-commissioned officers and privates were taken prisoners. One thousand stand of arms, a large amount of ammunition and stores, together with

two vessels, one loaded with cotton, and the other loaded with coffee, were also taken.

An attack was made on Lexington, Missouri, by two thousand Confederates. The Confederates had no artillery, and were repulsed, with the loss of sixty killed.

Twenty-three Confederate prisoners were taken at Greytown, Mo.

30th. A skirmish took place at Ball's Cross Roads, Virginia.

Major-General Fremont issued a proclamation declaring martial law throughout the State of Missouri, and also declaring that the property of the Confederates in the State should be confiscated, their slaves set free, and themselves, if found guilty by a court-martial, shot.

SEPTEMBER.

1st. A party of three hundred and fifty Confederates made an attack upon the Dent County, Missouri, Home Guard, numbering not over forty or fifty men. Two of the Home Guard were killed, and seven wounded.

There was a fight at Boone Court House, Virginia, resulting in the total rout of the Confederates. Our men burned the town.

A fight took place at Bennett's Mills, Missouri.

2d. The Secretary of the Treasury issued an appeal to the people of the Union for a National Loan.

3d. The passenger express train on the Hannibal and St. Joseph Railroad was thrown into Platte river, the timbers of the bridge across that stream having been burned nearly through by the Confederates. Seventeen persons were killed, and sixty wounded.

News received of the wreck, on the coast of Florida, of the privateer Jeff. Davis.

5th. The city of Columbus, Kentucky, was taken possession of by Confederate troops.

6th. The city of Paducah, Kentucky, was occupied by a strong force of Union troops.

9th. One hundred and fifty-six of the Union prisoners taken by the Confederates at Bull's Run, were sent from Richmond to Castle Pinckney, in Charleston harbor.

The Union troops, under General Rosencranz, attacked five thousand Confederates under General Floyd, who occupied a strong position at Carnifex Ferry, on the Gauley river, Virginia, and after a severe battle of four hours, General Rosencranz recalled his forces in consequence of the darkness. The Union troops laid on their arms all night, and were prepared to renew the engagement on the return of light; but in the morning it was found that General Floyd had fled during the night, leaving large quantities of ammunition, arms, camp stores, equipage, and forty-five head of cattle.

Two of the Mississippi gun-boats attacked and silenced a Confederate battery at Lucas Bend, and disabled two boats belonging to the secessionists.

11th. A reconnoitering party, numbering about two thousand men, from General McClellan's division, were attacked by a party of Confederates near Lewinsville, Va. A skirmish ensued, and the enemy were driven back.

The President wrote a letter to General Fremont, requesting him to modify the clause in relation to slaves in his proclamation, so as to conform with the Act of Congress confiscating the property of Confederates.

During a slight skirmish at Stewart's Hill, Virginia, the Confederates lost twelve killed and wounded.

12th. Colonel John A. Washington, the former proprietor of Mount Vernon, the home of Washington, was killed near Elk Water, Virginia, while reconnoitering. Colonel Washington was in the Confederate army.

A number of the Confederate forces advanced upon the Union works of Cheat Mountain Summit, Virginia, and were repulsed after considerable skirmishing.

A party under Lieutenant Shipley, from Fort Pickens, succeeded in burning and totally destroying the United States floating dry dock, at the Pensacola Navy Yard, which was in the possession of the Confederates.

13th. About one thousand Confederates attacked Boonville, Missouri, which was defended by a small body of the Home Guard. The Confederates were repulsed.

Thirteen members of the Maryland Legislature, two editors of secession newspapers, one member of Congress, and the gubernatorial candidate of the secession party, were arrested in Baltimore.

Twenty sailors and sixty-five marines, manning three barges from the United States ship Colorado, lying off Pensacola, during the night fired and destroyed a privateer schooner called the Judith, lying off Pensacola Navy Yard.

15th. Four hundred and fifty Confederates attacked the Twenty-eighth Pennsylvania Regiment, near Darnestown, Md., and were repulsed, with a loss of eight or ten killed. The Union loss was but one killed.

16th. Ship Island, lying near the coast of Mississippi, in the Gulf of Mexico, was evacuated by the Confederates and occupied by Union forces.

Camp Talbot, in Missouri, was captured by Union troops.

The Confederates, under General Price, commenced the bombardment of the city of Lexington, Missouri.

17th. A train of cars on the Ohio and Mississippi Railroad, containing a portion of the Nineteenth Illinois Regiment of soldiers, broke through a bridge near Huron, Indiana. Twenty-six of the soldiers were killed, and one hundred and twelve wounded.

Part of an Iowa regiment fell in with about four thousand Confederates at Blue Mills Landing, Missouri, and a sharp skirmish ensued. The Iowa troops were forced to retire, but being reinforced,

preparations were made for another attack, and the Confederates retreated.

A skirmish took place at Mariatown, Missouri. The Confederates lost seven killed.

18th. Eighteen secession members of the Maryland Legislature, including the Speaker of the House, together with all the officers and clerks, were arrested in Frederick, where the Legislature was to have convened. They were sent to Fortress Monroe.

The banks of New Orleans suspended specie payments.

A slight skirmish took place near Barboursville, Ky. No loss on either side.

Skirmish near Columbus, Ky.

20th. General Robert Anderson took command of the Union forces in Kentucky.

About three thousand Union troops, under Colonel James A. Mulligan, entrenched at Lexington, Missouri, were attacked on Monday, the 16th, by twenty-five thousand Confederate troops, commanded by General Price. After five days' fighting, the Union forces were surrounded, and, their supply of water having been cut off, they were forced to capitulate. The Union loss was thirty-nine killed, and one hundred and twenty wounded. The loss on the Confederate side was about fourteen hundred killed and wounded.

A skirmish took place at Tuscumbia, Missouri.

21st. General Lane's command surprised a superior force of Confederates at Papinsville, Missouri, and after a severe fight routed them.

22d. Four Confederates were killed during a skirmish at Ellicott's Mills, Kentucky.

24th. Five hundred of the Fourth Ohio Regiment, with one piece of artillery, and the Ringgold Cavalry, seventy-five in number, under Colonel Cantwell, and four hundred of the Eighth Ohio Regiment, under Colonel Harte, made an advance from New Creek toward Romney, Va. They drove the enemy, seven hundred strong, out of Mechanicsville Gap, and, advancing on Romney, stormed the town, causing the enemy to retreat to the mountains.

25th. A skirmish took place near Chapmansville, Va.

26th. In accordance with the recommendation of the President of the United States, this day was observed as a national fast day.

Four Confederates were killed and five taken prisoners in an affair at Lucas Bend, Ky.

27th. General Fremont, with an expedition embracing twelve or fifteen thousand men, left St. Louis in fifteen steamers, bound up the Missouri river.

28th. All the Confederate forces retired from their positions along the Potomac in front of Washington, and the Union troops again occupied Munson's and Upton's Hills and Falls Church village.

Two advance bodies of the Union troops came into collision by mistaking each other for the enemy, near Fall's Church, Virginia.

29th. The Union troops lost seven killed and fifteen wounded in an affair with the enemy at Fall's Church, Virginia.

OCTOBER.

1st. The Government transport propeller Fanny, was captured between Hatteras Inlet and Chicamacomico, North Carolina. With her were taken thirty-one men belonging to the Thirtieth Indiana Regiment, and stores and ammunition valued at one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

The Confederate camp at Charleston, Missouri, was captured by Union troops, and forty secessionists taken prisoners.

3d. General Reynolds made a reconnoissance from his position at Cheat Mountain, and met the Confederate force under General Lee at Greenbriar, Virginia, and drove them from the ground.

A Union reconnoitering party met a large body of the enemy at Buffalo Hill, Ky., and an engagement took place.

5th. An Indiana regiment, which was encamped at Chicamacomico, on the coast of North Carolina, was surrounded and attacked by an army of Confederates, when the United States gun-boat Monticello, lying at Hatteras Inlet, went to their relief; she opened fire with shot and shell upon the enemy, routing and scattering them in all directions, and effectually covered the retreat of the Union soldiers. The slaughter among the Confederates was terrific.

7th. General W. F. Sherman assumed command of the Union forces in Kentucky, relieving General Robert Anderson.

9th. A division of the Union troops occupied Lewinsville, Va.

All the banks in Pittsburg, Pa., resumed specie payments.

About one thousand five hundred Confederates, before daylight, surprised and attacked the Zouave Union camp at Santa Rosa Island, near Fort Pickens. Before a proper defense could be made, the camp was burned; but the Union men soon rallied, and drove the Confederates to their boats.

11th. An expedition under Lieutenant Harrell, in three small boats from the steamer Union, went into Quantico Creek, Va., under the cover of night, and burned a Confederate schooner.

12th. An attack was made by a Confederate gun-boat fleet and fire-ships, from New Orleans, on the Union blockading squadron at the entrance of the Mississippi river.

13th. A battle took place near Lebanon, Missouri, between detachments of Union and Confederate troops. The enemy were completely routed.

A battalion of cavalry, under Major Clark Wright, captured the town of Linn Creek, Missouri, and took a company of Confederates prisoners.

An attack was made by Union troops upon the Confederates at Frederick, Missouri, which resulted in the enemy being defeated with great loss.

16th. The Confederate batteries on the Potomac showed themselves. The United States steamer Pawnee, in going down the river, received seven shots, but was not seriously damaged.

The Union troops recaptured the city of Lexington, Mo., the main body of the Confederates having previously evacuated the place.

An engagement took place between one thousand Union troops, under General Geary, and over two thousand Confederates, on Bolivar Heights, near Harper's Ferry, Va. The Confederates were repulsed with considerable loss. The Union troops captured from the enemy a thirty-two pounder cannon. Our loss was but seven killed and wounded, and the Confederate loss was supposed to be one hundred and fifty.

A battle took place near Pilot Knob, Mo. The Confederates were routed.

17th. The Confederate army retired from Fairfax Court House, and also from Leesburg, Va.

Lieutenant Kirby, with fifteen men of Major Wright's battalion, had a fight with forty-five Confederates, near Linn Creek, Mo.

18th. The Pacific telegraph line was completed in its western course to Salt Lake City.

19th. Colonel Morgan, with two hundred and twenty Union men, of the Eighteenth Missouri, and two pieces of artillery, had a fight with some four hundred Confederates, in Big Hurricane Creek, Carroll county, Mo.

21st. A Union fleet, consisting of twenty steamers, sailed from Annapolis, Md., bound South.

A severe engagement took place at Ball's Bluff, Va., between Edward's Ferry and Harper's Ferry, on the Potomac river, between about eighteen hundred Union troops, under General Baker, and four thousand Confederates. The battle lasted nearly all day, and the Union men were forced to retire with considerable loss. During the engagement, acting Brigadier-General Edward D. Baker, United States Senator from Oregon, was killed, his body being pierced with half-a-dozen bullets.

Two thousand five hundred Union troops under the command of Colonel Plummer, encountered and completely routed a Confederate force, estimated at five thousand, at Fredericktown, Missouri.

General Zollickoffer, with six or seven thousand Confederates, made three separate attacks on Camp Wild Cat, in Kentucky, which was commanded by General Garrard. The Confederates were repulsed each time with considerable loss.

23d. The President of the United States suspended the operation of the writ of habeas corpus in the District of Columbia in all cases relating to the military.

The Second Ohio Regiment, under Colonel Harris, and a company of cavalry, had a smart engagement with about six hundred Confederates, at West Liberty, Morgan county, Mo. The Union men soon routed the secessionists, and in their flight, they threw away their guns and everything that tended to impede their progress.

24th. The western section of the California telegraph connected with the eastern at Salt Lake City, thus completing the wires between the Atlantic and Pacific oceans.

25th. Fremont's Body Guard, numbering one hundred and sixty, made a brilliant charge upon about two thousand Confederates at Springfield, Missouri, and completely routed them.

William Smith, one of the men captured on board the Southern privateer Jeff. Davis, was found guilty in Philadelphia on a charge of piracy.

26th. General Kelley attacked Romney, Va., routing the enemy after an engagement of two hours.

28th. A party of four hundred Confederates at Digger's Mills, Missouri, offered to lay down their arms and return home, if secured against arrest by the Union troops. General Henderson, of the State Union militia, agreed to the terms.

A large body of Confederates attacked the Union men at Cromwell, Ky., but were beaten off.

29th. The great naval and military expedition destined to operate on the Southern coast, sailed from Hampton Roads at 6 o'clock, A. M. About twenty-seven thousand troops accompanied the expedition. Commodore J. F. Dupont was the naval commander, and General Thomas W. Sherman the military commander.

A detachment of Union soldiers attacked two hundred and fifty Confederate cavalry at Woodbury, Ky., and routed them.

30th. All the prisoners at Fort Lafayette, numbering one hundred and forty-eight, were removed to Fort Warren, in Boston harbor.

31st. About three hundred Confederates made an attack upon the Union camp at Morgantown, Ky., but were repulsed.

NOVEMBER.

1st. Lieutenant-General Winfield Scott, commander of the United States army, was placed by the President upon the retired list of army officers, without reduction of his current pay, subsistence or allowance. The act was done at General Scott's own request.

Major-General George B. McClellan assumed command of the armies of the United States, in place of Lieutenant-General Scott, by direction of the President.

A violent storm overtook the great Union naval and military expedition off the coast of North Carolina.

2d. Major-General John C. Fremont, having been removed from the command of the Union army in Missouri, issued a farewell address to the soldiers.

A skirmish took place near Leavenworth, Kansas, and the Confederates were routed.

A spirited engagement took place at Platte City, Missouri, between Major Joseph's Union forces, and Silas Gordon's Confederate forces. The attack was made by the Confederates, but they soon broke and ran in every direction, throwing down their guns, and leaving all their equipments.

The Union forces, under General Nelson, took Prestonburg, Ky., meeting no resistance.

4th. Twenty-five of the vessels of the great expedition anchored off Port Royal harbor, South Carolina.

An expedition under Colonel Dodge, took possession of Houston, Texas county, Missouri, and captured a large amount of Confederate property, and several prominent secessionists.

6th. A Union force of about three thousand five hundred men, under Grant, left Cairo, Illinois, in four steamers and two gun-boats. They landed three miles above Columbus, and made an attack upon the Confederate camp at Belmont, Missouri. A fight ensued, and the Unionists succeeded in destroying the camp, captured a Confederate battery of six guns, and took one hundred and thirty prisoners. Fearing Confederate reinforcements, they concluded to retire to their boats; but they were met by a large Confederate force, and the fighting was renewed, with great slaughter on both sides. The Union men succeeded in getting on board the steamers, their retreat being covered by the gun-boats.

One hundred and twenty Union troops, under Captain Shields, were captured by the enemy near Little Santa Fe, Missouri.

7th. Nearly all of the vessels composing the great naval and military expedition having arrived at Port Royal harbor, South Carolina, an attack was made on the Confederate batteries, known as Forts Walker and Beauregard, both of which were scientifically constructed, well mounted and well garrisoned. After less than five hours' fighting, the batteries were silenced, the Confederates beat a precipitate retreat, and the victory was complete. The forts and batteries were then taken possession of by the Union forces.

8th. The intercommunication between Savannah and Charleston was closed by blockading the mouth of Scull creek, in Port Royal harbor.

Commander Dupont, of the naval expedition, sent a force up Port Royal harbor to examine the village of Beaufort, S. C. The place was found entirely deserted.

A battle took place between a division of the Union army, under General Nelson, and an army of Confederates at Ivy creek, near Pickett, Ky. The Confederates were completely routed.

9th. Major-General Henry W. Halleck was ordered to take command of the Department of the West, and General Don Carlos Buell was assigned to the command of the Department of Kentucky.

10th. General Benham's brigade had a skirmish with the Confederates in the Kanawha Valley, Va. The Confederates ran, and the Union forces pursued them twenty-five miles.

The Union forces at Guyandotte, Va., on the Ohio river, having been betrayed, and a number of them murdered by the Confederate inhabitants of the town, the place was fired, and about two-thirds of the village destroyed.

11th. One hundred and fifty mounted Union troops were attacked

near Kansas City, Missouri, by five or six hundred Confederates, and, after a desperate struggle, the enemy retreated to the woods.

The Union troops, under General Nelson, entered and occupied Piketon, Kentucky.

14th. The Unionists in East Tennessee burned the Cumberland River Railroad bridge.

15th. The United States steam frigate San Jacinto, Captain Wilkes, arrived at Hampton Roads, having on board James M. Mason, of Virginia, and John Slidell, of Louisiana, two Confederate Commissioners, sent from the Southern States to negotiate treaties with the nations of Europe. They were taken, on the 8th of November, off Bermuda, from on board the British mail steamer Trent, they having taken passage on board that vessel at Havana, for England. The private Secretaries of the Ambassadors were also taken.

16th. Fifty wagons, and five hundred head of cattle, unprotected, were captured by the Confederates in Cass county, Missouri.

A Union foraging party, consisting of fifty-two men, belonging to the New York Thirteenth Regiment, were surrounded and captured near Falls Church, Virginia.

17th. A party of Union troops recaptured nearly all the wagons and cattle that were siezed by the Confederates in Cass county, Mo.

18th. General Halleck superseded General Hunter in the command of the Department of Missouri.

One hundred and fifty Confederate prisoners were taken near Warrensburg, Missouri.

A convention of delegates, representing forty-five counties of North Carolina, met at Hatteras, and adopted an ordinance favorable to the Union cause.

19th. An expedition from General Dix's department arrived from Maryland on the eastern shore of Virginia. Upon the approach of the Union troops, the Confederates laid down their arms, and the Stars and Stripes were raised in all parts of Northampton and Accomac counties.

The largest portion of the town of Warsaw, Missouri, was burned by the Confederates, to prevent its being occupied by Union troops for winter quarters.

The gun-boat Conestoga went from Paducah, Ky., on an exploring expedition up the Tennessee river, and discovered a Confederate battery near the Tennessee line. She threw one shell, which routed the Confederates. Still further up another battery was discovered and engaged. The Confederates were again routed.

20th. The Confederate General Floyd suddenly broke up his camp in the vicinity of the Gauley river, and made a hasty retreat.

A fleet of about thirty old whale ships, loaded with stone, sailed from New Bedford, Massachusetts, and New London, Connecticut, bound South, for the purpose of being sunk in the channels at the entrance of some of the Southern ports.

22d. Fort Pickens opened fire on the Confederate batteries at Pensacola, which was answered by Forts Barrancas and McRae.

23d. The firing between Fort Pickens and the Confederate batteries at Pensacola was continued for two days. The Confederate Fort McRae was effectually silenced; Fort Barrancas and the Navy Yard were materially damaged, and the town of Warrington was mostly burned.

24th. James M. Mason, and John Slidell, the Confederate Commissioners, with their Secretaries, were landed at Fort Warren, in Boston harbor.

A portion of Captain Dupont's Port Royal expedition took possession of Tybee Island, at the mouth of the Savannah river.

A skirmish took place at Lancaster, Missouri, between a Union force four hundred and fifty strong, under Colonel Moore, and four hundred and twenty Confederates. The latter were routed.

26th. General Ben McCulloch, with his army, again occupied Springfield, Missouri.

A skirmish took place near Vienna, Va., between one hundred and twenty Union troops, and five hundred Confederate cavalry. Forty of the Union troops were either killed or taken prisoners.

27th. The steamship Constitution, having on board two regiments of troops, forming part of General Butler's expedition, sailed South from Hampton Roads.

The First Pennsylvania Cavalry entered Drainesville, Virginia, and arrested six disloyal citizens, and five or six officers of the Confederate army. On the return they were fired upon by a party of Confederates, and had one man wounded.

Major R. M. Hough, in command of four companies of the First Missouri Cavalry, had an engagement with the Confederates at Black Walnut creek, Missouri, and killed and wounded seventeen, and took five prisoners.

28th. Thanksgiving day was duly observed.

29th. A skirmish occurred near New Market, Va., about five miles from Old Point.

The train on the Platte River Railroad was seized on its arrival at Weston, Missouri, by the guerrillas, under the Confederate Gordon, and the United States Express Company's freight appropriated.

DECEMBER.

2d. The first regular session of the Thirty-seventh Congress commenced in Washington.

A party of citizens attacked a gang of returned Confederates from General Price's army, under Captains Young and Wheatley, near Dunksburg, about twenty miles west of Sedalia, Missouri, killing seven and wounding ten of them.

3d. Henry C. Burnett, a Representative in Congress from Kentucky, and John W. Reed, a Representative from Missouri, were expelled from the House of Representatives.

A skirmish took place in Salem, Missouri, in which the Confederates were routed.

The steamship Constitution, with the Twenty-sixth Massachusetts, and Ninth Connecticut Regiments, being the advance of General Butler's expedition, arrived at Ship Island, off the Mississippi coast, and landed the troops.

The frigate Santee destroyed a fortification that was nearly completed at Bolivar Point, in Galveston harbor.

4th. The traitor, John C. Breckinridge, of Kentucky, was expelled from the Senate of the United States, by a unanimous vote.

5th. The reports of the Secretaries of War and the Navy show that the Government had in service for the war 682,971 men, not one among whom was a conscript, all having volunteered.

6th. A riot occurred at Nashville, Tennessee, occasioned by the authorities resorting to drafting for soldiers to supply the Confederate army.

8th. A party of six hundred Confederates, with six pieces of artillery, opened fire on the Union troops across the river, at Dam No. 5, on the upper Potomac. They were driven off by the Union riflemen.

9th. A detachment of another stone fleet, composed of six ships and one barque, left New Bedford for a Southern port.

Forty Union men, from Colonel Burnside's regiment, burned a bridge at Whippoorwill, five miles from Russellville, on the Memphis Branch Railroad. They attacked the Confederates guarding the bridge, numbering thirteen, killed two, and took the remainder prisoners.

10th. Four gun-boats of the Potomac Flotilla opened fire upon Freestone Point, and, after driving the Confederates from the vicinity, a boat's crew went on shore and fired four buildings, which were filled with enemy's stores.

11th. All the islands adjacent to Port Royal, South Carolina, were occupied by Union troops, and the work of cotton picking on the plantations commenced.

12th. A destructive conflagration broke out on the night of the 11th, in the city of Charleston, S. C., and continued nearly the whole of the next day. Five hundred and seventy-six buildings were destroyed.

13th. William Henry Johnson, a private in company D, First New York Cavalry, known as the Lincoln Cavalay was executed for having deserted from the national army, with the avowed intention of giving information to the enemy.

A Confederate fortification, in the woods opposite Edwards' Ferry, Va., was routed out by shot and shell from Franklin's Rhode Island Battery.

One of the best fought battles of the war took place at Allegheny Camp, Pocahontas county, Va., General R. H. Milroy commanding the Union troops, and General Johnson, of Georgia, commanding the Confederates. The fight lasted from daylight till dark. General Milroy withdrew his troops at nightfall, intending to renew the attack the next morning, but during the night the Confederates silently left their camp.

The town of Papinsville, Missouri, was burned by Union forces, under command of Major H. H. Williams.

The town of Butler, the county seat of Bates county, Missouri, was also burned.

15th. The Union pickets were attacked by a party of Confederates at Point of Rocks, on the Potomac river. The Union men retreated, fighting their way to their tents, and lost one man killed, and two taken prisoners.

16th. Platte City, Missouri, was fired by the Confederates.

17th. Three regiments of Confederates attacked eight companies of the Thirty-second Indiana volunteers, at the railroad bridge across Green river, near Mumfordsville, Ky. After a short but severe fight the Confederates were defeated.

The entrance to the harbor of Savannah, Georgia, was blocked up by sinking seven vessels loaded with stone.

18th. General Pope's expedition successfully cut off the enemy's camp near Shawnee Mound, Missouri, and scattered them, twenty-two hundred strong, in every direction.

A part of General Pope's forces, under Colonel J. C. Davis, and Major Marshall, surprised another camp of the enemy at Milford, Missouri, a little north of Warrensburg. A brisk skirmish ensued, when the enemy, finding himself surrounded, surrendered at discretion. Thirteen hundred Confederate prisoners were taken, one thousand stand of arms, one thousand horses, sixty-five wagons, and a large quantity of tents, baggage and supplies.

19th. The Confederate battery at Point of Rocks commenced shelling the encampment of Colonel Geary's Pennsylvania Regiment. The Union battery returned the fire, and the Confederates retreated, with a loss of fourteen killed, and many wounded.

A special messenger from England arrived in Washington with dispatches to Lord Lyons, the British Minister.

20th. Major McKee, with one hundred and three men of Colonel Bishop's command, encountered and repulsed four hundred Confederates four miles north of Hudson, Missouri.

The Confederates destroyed, at night, about one hundred miles of the North Missouri Railroad, commencing near Hudson, and extending to Warrentown.

General Ord's brigade had a brisk engagement with a Confederate force of over five thousand men near Drainesville, Virginia.

21st. The entrance to the harbor of Charleston, S. C., was effectually closed, by sinking seventeen old whaling vessels, loaded with stone, across the channel.

22d. Two companies of the Twentieth New York Regiment left Fortress Monroe for Newport News, Virginia, and proceeded to New Market Bridge. While near the bridge, they found themselves surrounded by Confederate cavalry and infantry, numbering seven hundred men, but succeeded in cutting their way out without loss. Reinforcements were sent for, and the remainder of the regiment was sent forward.

24th. The War Department issued orders stopping the enlistment of cavalry soldiers. The Government had all the cavalry that was necessary.

A bill to increase the duties on tea, coffee, sugar and molasses passed Congress.

General Pope's cavalry was sent to Lexington, Missouri, where they captured two Confederate captains, one lieutenant and four men, with horses, &c. They destroyed the foundry and ferry boats at that place.

25th. Christmas day was duly observed. The Union soldiers in all the camps celebrated the day.

26th. The Government stables at Washington were destroyed by fire.

Hon. Alfred Ely, representative in Congress from the Twenty-ninth District of New York, returned to Washington from Richmond, where he had been confined as a prisoner of war since the 21st of July. He was exchanged for Charles J. Faulkner.

28th. Diplomatic correspondence in relation to the seizure of four American traitors on board the British steamer Trent, between the official representatives of the American, English and French Governments, given to the public. The American Government acceded to the demand of England, and surrendered James M. Mason and John Slidell, Confederate Commissioners, and E. J. MacFarland and Geo. Eustis, their Secretaries.

General Prentiss, with four hundred and fifty men, encountered and dispersed nine hundred Confederates, under Colonel Dorsey, at Mount Zion, Boone county, Missouri.

29th. A slight skirmish occurred in Adair county, Kentucky, in which the Confederates lost five killed.

30th. The banks of New York, Philadelphia, Albany and Boston suspended specie payments.



(1864) *Order No 4131*
dep: 20 inches 62
Kennedy & Co
Ph

PRICE,



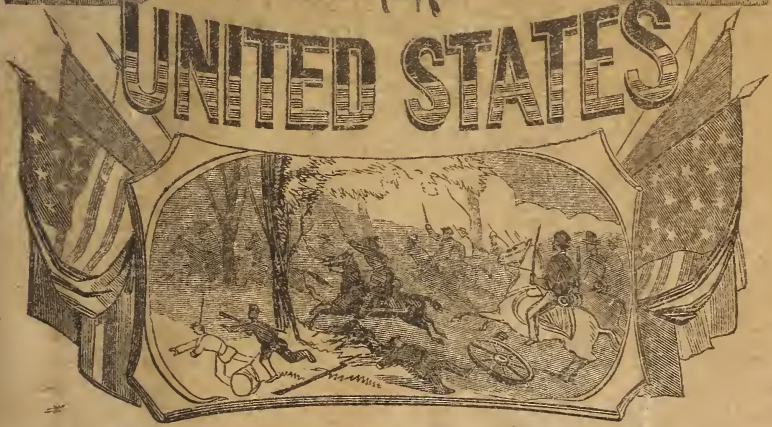
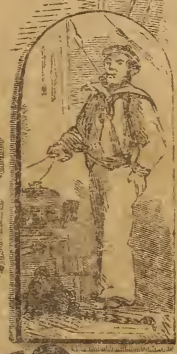
A HISTORY

of the

CIVIL WAR

in the

UNITED STATES



KENNEDY & COMPANY, PUBLISHERS,
SOUTH EAST CORNER OF FOURTH AND WALNUT STREETS,
PHILADELPHIA, PA.



THE PHILADELPHIA WEEKLY UNION,

THE CHEAPEST AND BEST
FAMILY, NEWS & LITERARY PAPER
IN AMERICA.

IT CONTAINS
THE BEST ORIGINAL STORIES OF REAL LIFE,
THE CHOICEST
ORIGINAL STORIES OF WESTERN & BORDER LIFE,
AND
Thrilling Sketches of Adventures with Indians and the
Wild Beasts of the Forest.

It also contains the very best Literary Articles on every subject of
importance and interest.

PRICE, ONLY ONE DOLLAR PER YEAR,

ACCOMPANIED
WITH A SPLENDID GIFT,

Worth from 50 Cents to \$1000.

AGENTS WANTED IN EVERY TOWN IN THE UNITED STATES.

ADDRESS ALL ORDERS TO J. M. PATTEE,
Box 2025, Philadelphia, Pa.

GREAT SACRIFICE!

WE ARE SELLING
BOOKS AND ENGRAVINGS,
WORTH ONE DOLLAR,

FOR FORTY CENTS EACH,

Accompanied by a Handsome Gift worth from 25 cts. to \$100 each.


SEND FOR A CATALOGUE.

Also, the Celebrated Gold Pen, at 31 cts. per box, with gifts.

ADDRESS ALL ORDERS TO J. LINDSAY & CO.,
Box 247, Philadelphia, Pa.







Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: May 2010

PreservationTechnologies

A WORLD LEADER IN COLLECTIONS PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 023 673 336 1